

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0000593915A







THE STATE CAPITOL—ERECTED 1909

K E N T U C K Y

The Pioneer State of the West

BY

THOMAS CRITTENDEN CHERRY

WITH INTRODUCTION BY
IRVIN S. COBB

D. C. HEATH AND COMPANY

BOSTON

NEW YORK

CHICAGO

F451
C52

COPYRIGHT, 1923, BY
D. C. HEATH AND COMPANY
2F3



JUL 21 '23

© C1 A752184

210 1

24/5 23 July 1923

PREFACE

History reveals to the reader the past and present world of human activity and discovers to him the relation of great social and political movements to events. Cause and effect will always be found standing in logical relation to each other. If rightly understood history inspires the reader with nobler ideals, stimulates him to heroic deeds, and furnishes him with useful knowledge. It helps him to explain his own life and to understand his own part in the great world drama.

Human conduct has been much the same since time began. The behavior of a group of people in any age or country may, in a great measure, interpret that of all large groups. The history of any state of our Nation will be found similar to that of any other state, and to that of the social and political movements of our country as a whole. The story of Kentucky is an inspiring page in the history of our great country that should lead the reader to a right appreciation of the dangers and hardships endured, and the sacrifices made by the American pioneers. It should awaken in the reader a desire to emulate all praiseworthy actions and to condemn selfish and cowardly conduct. The foregoing will indicate to the thoughtful teacher that the history of Kentucky should be studied in connection with the history of the United States.

The history of Kentucky in many ways is unique. Cut off from the nearest settlements of the East by hundreds of miles of savage-haunted and forest covered mountains, this inland wilderness became the scene of the most bloody and heroic struggle in the history of the states of our Union. Beginning at the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, the first settlers received the full force of the savage attacks of British and Indian foes. In spite of these, this heroic band of pioneers succeeded in founding their homes and becoming a powerful guard at the back door of the colonies of the East. Chiefly through their efforts the Northwest Territory was wrested from the British and Indians, which, by the treaty of 1783, became a part of the territory of the United States. This westward thrust, delivered in the nick of time, likewise led to the successful conquest of all that vast domain to the Pacific Sea. From the time of the settlement of Kentucky the boundary of the United States was logically extended to include all the territory west of the Appalachian Mountains, and to lay the foundation of our present national greatness. Subsequent to the founding of the State its development has followed similar lines to that of other states of the Union.

To the Teacher.—It is impossible to compress the heroic story of the Pioneer State of the West into a limited narrative without omitting many important details which give added life and interest to the story. For this reason many references are given to further sources of information that will make interesting supplementary readings.

Wherever possible, strong representative leaders have been made the center of historic movements. The study of great men, great measures, great social and political ideals are the things most worth while in the history of any people. A right understanding of the history of Kentucky will engender state pride and a high spirit of patriotism.

In many instances the author has endeavored to connect the principal movements in the history of the State in a narrative form instead of following a strict chronological order.

Only a few of the most important questions have been appended to each chapter. They will serve to suggest many others to the thoughtful teacher.

Most of the text has been tested in classes in Kentucky history in an effort to adapt the story to the range of thought and interest of the young student. The text has been divided into lesson chapters representing, as nearly as possible, units of special historic values. This arrangement will commend itself as an aid to both teacher and pupil.

The author acknowledges with gratitude the valuable aid rendered him by many friends, fellow teachers, and capable critics who have contributed their sympathy and help in the preparation of this work. Special mention is due Messrs. Ballard Thruston and Otto Rothert, members of the Filson Club, Hon. George Colvin, Supt. of Public Instruction, Miss Ella Jeffries of the Western Kentucky Normal School, Prof. A. W. Mell and Hon. M. M. Logan for their thoughtful and helpful criticisms of the manu-

script. Whatever the merit, the author sends forth this volume as a work of love, and the devotion of years of labor to the idea of a worthy service to the youth of our great Commonwealth.

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION : IRVIN S. COBB	xi
----------------------------------------	----

Prehistoric Era

CHAPTER	PAGE
I KENTUCKY BEFORE THE WHITE MAN CAME . . .	1
II MOUND BUILDERS	5
III THE INDIANS OF NORTH AMERICA	10

Period of Exploration and Settlement

IV EARLY EXPLORERS	16
V VANGUARD OF THE PIONEERS	21
VI THE PIONEER AND HIS INDIAN FOE	30
VII ATTEMPTED SETTLEMENT OF KENTUCKY	35
VIII FIRST SETTLEMENT OF KENTUCKY	41
IX THE FAILURE OF THE TRANSYLVANIA COMPANY	49
X PROGRESS IN THE SETTLEMENT OF KENTUCKY	54
XI EARLY ROADS	59
XII PERILOUS DAYS	65
XIII CLARK PLANS AN EXPEDITION AGAINST BRITISH AND INDIANS	72
XIV CLARK'S EXPEDITION	77
XV HARDSHIPS AND DANGERS OF EARLY YEARS	82
XVI DESTRUCTION OF INDIAN TOWNS	88
XVII ATTACK ON BRYAN'S STATION	93
XVIII ORIGIN OF PIONEER PEOPLE	100
XIX SEPARATION FROM VIRGINIA. STRUGGLE FOR STATE- HOOD	106

CHAPTER		PAGE
XX	KENTUCKY ENTERS THE UNION	114
XXI	SIDE LIGHTS ON KENTUCKY'S STRUGGLE FOR STATE- HOOD	122
XXII	A REVIEW OF TEN YEARS	130
XXIII	LATER BORDER TROUBLES	137
	<i>Period of Commonwealth</i>	
XXIV	SETTING UP THE STATE GOVERNMENT	145
XXV	THE BIG SANDY VALLEY AND OTHER SETTLEMENTS	155
XXVI	A POLITICAL CRISIS	161
XXVII	CHARACTER, MANNERS AND CUSTOMS OF EARLY KENTUCKIANS	168
XXVIII	POLITICAL BEGINNINGS	177
XXIX	POLITICAL MOVEMENTS AND WESTWARD EXPANSION	185
XXX	BURR'S CONSPIRACY. BATTLE OF TIPPECANOE .	192
XXXI	KENTUCKY IN WAR OF 1812	199
XXXII	CLOSE OF WAR OF 1812	207
XXXIII	FINANCIAL STRUGGLES	215
XXXIV	THE OLD COURT AND NEW COURT PARTIES . . .	222
XXXV	HAPPENINGS OF THIRTY YEARS	230
XXXVI	STATE AFFAIRS AND THE MEXICAN WAR . . .	237
XXXVII	PERIOD OF UNREST	246
XXXVIII	KENTUCKY'S LOYALTY TO THE UNION	255
XXXIX	KENTUCKY'S NEUTRALITY	263
XL	THE CIVIL WAR	271
XLI	THE SECOND INVASION OF KENTUCKY. MORGAN'S CAVALRY	281
XLII	CLOSE OF THE WAR. PEACE AND RECONSTRUCTION	291
XLIII	POLITICAL AFFAIRS	302
XLIV	CIVIL AFFAIRS	311
XLV	EDUCATIONAL PROGRESS AND RESOURCES OF KEN- TUCKY	319

CONTENTS

ix

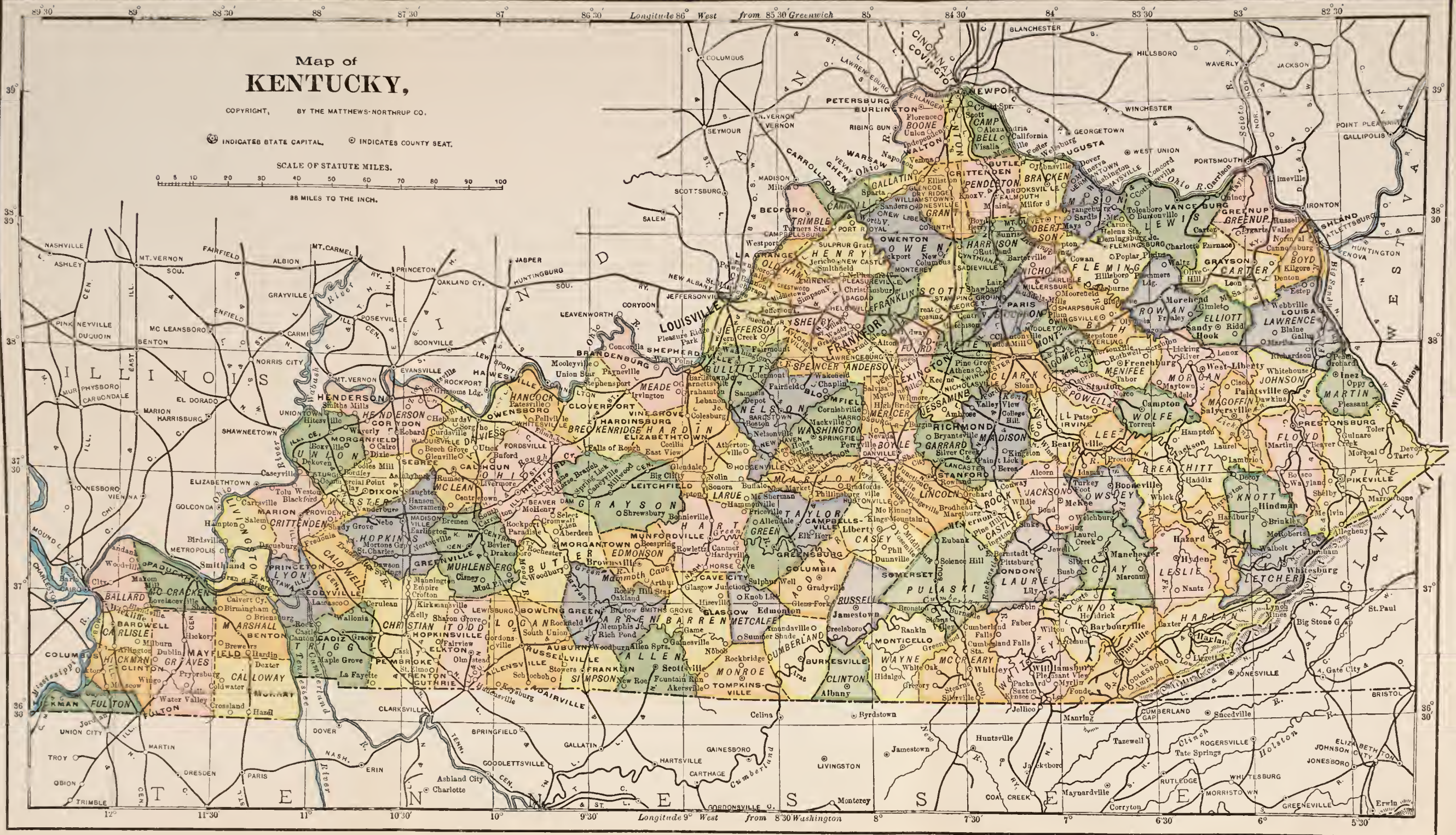
CHAPTER		PAGE
XLVI	WAR, WASTE AND PROGRESS	327
XLVII	POLITICS, PROBLEMS AND POPULATION	334
XLVIII	THEN AND NOW	343
XLIX	THE CONSTITUTION OF KENTUCKY	352

Map of KENTUCKY,

COPYRIGHT, BY THE MATTHEWS-NORTHROP CO.

INDICATES STATE CAPITAL. INDICATES COUNTY SEAT.

SCALE OF STATUTE MILES.



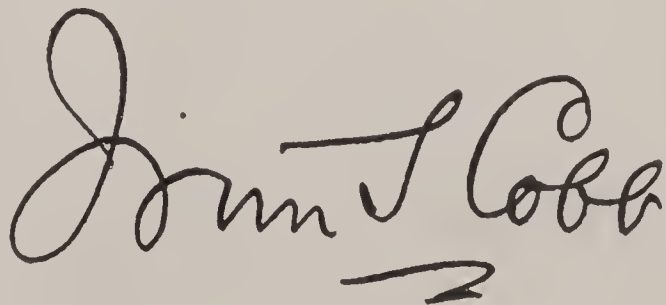
INTRODUCTION

I have read a good many histories of Kentucky. I have never read a better one than this.

To begin with, it is the work of a native of our State; a man whose contribution to education and culture in the State has been splendid, and one who has brought to this undertaking a sincere love for Kentucky, for its people, its institutions, its traditions, its noble past and its hopeful future.

The History itself, it seems to me, is admirably adapted for the purpose which inspired its writing. It is not burdensome, but it is complete. It is fair, it is honest, and it is truthful.

As a textbook I am sure it amply will serve the need for making the youth of Kentucky properly acquainted with their own State. They should, in maturity, be better citizens for having studied it. Certainly, it will inspire their young minds with a proper pride in Kentucky.

A handwritten signature in cursive script, reading "John T. Cobb". The signature is written in dark ink and is positioned at the bottom right of the page. There is a small mark below the signature, possibly a flourish or a correction.



A WILDERNESS SCENE

KENTUCKY

The Pioneer State of the West

PREHISTORIC ERA

CHAPTER I

KENTUCKY BEFORE THE WHITE MAN CAME

BEFORE the coming of the earliest explorers and settlers Kentucky was a vast wilderness and rugged waste still unchanged by the hand of civilized man. It was bounded by the broad Ohio on the north, to the east lay the cloud-capped Allegheny Mountains, and to the south the endless forests and streams of what is now Tennessee, while the mighty "Father of Waters" washed its western shores. This territory, comprising over forty thousand square miles, shield-shaped,¹ and sloping westward, made a changing scene of hills and mountains, rivers and valleys, forests and open stretches of fertile lands called "Barrens." Numerous rivers, choked by fallen trees and fed by

¹ "A mighty tableland lies southward in a hardy region of our country. It has the form of a colossal shield, lacking and broken in some of its outlines and rough and rude of make. Nature forged it for some crisis in her long warfare of time and change, made use of it, and so left it lying as one of her ancient battle pieces—Kentucky. The great shield is raised high out of the earth at one end and sunk deep into it at the other." "The Bride of the Mistletoe," James Lane Allen.

pure springs, wound in and out down the fertile valleys. Most of these streams rose in the mountains or highlands and after wandering in many directions poured their waters into the beautiful Ohio.¹ Here and there the silence was broken by rippling shoals or roaring waterfalls which mingled their music with the discordant cries of wild animals and fowls and the war whoop of roving bands of savages. Numerous caves cut by winding underground streams in bygone ages, opened their gloomy portals upon a wild landscape adding a charm of mystery to the scene. Beneath the everlasting hills lay vast beds of coal, iron ore, and pools of oil, and from its surface grew endless forests of finest timber, all waiting the coming of the white man and the needs of civilization. Many wild flowers and shrubs bloomed in abundance everywhere, fertile stretches of open land were covered with clover and wild pea vines, and beautiful birds of many varieties gladdened the scene with their songs.

Fish of many kinds swarmed in the creeks and rivers, and swans, ducks, geese and many other native water fowls floated upon the peaceful waters or wound their flight from stream to stream and lake to lake in large flocks. Pigeons in countless numbers and beautifully colored parrakeets swarmed in the forests, and great owls uttered their solemn notes in the twilight of the dismal woods. Numerous flocks of wild turkeys fed upon an abundance of acorns, hazelnuts, chestnuts, wild berries, and the many varieties of insects that infested the woods and Barrens.

Dense forests crowded to the water's edge and reach-

¹ Ohio is an Indian name, O-Y-O, meaning beautiful river.

ing back in endless confusion, through valleys and up-hill slopes, were matted in many places with a tangled undergrowth of bushes, briars and vines that made difficult a passage even for the wild animals. Giant forests of oak and tulip, beech and ash, sycamore and linden, cedar and pine, and many other varieties of trees grew so close that their leafy branches spread a canopy through which the rays of the sun could scarcely penetrate, producing twilight effects even at high noon.

Through these forests roamed immense herds of buffalo, deer, and elk which broke out paths or trails to watering places, salt licks, and barren patches of land covered with wild grasses.

Many other animals roamed the woods, and birds in great abundance swarmed in the forests. Panther and wild cat crouched in the dense canebrakes or on overhanging cliffs ready to spring upon their unsuspecting victims. Bear and large packs of wolves that lived in the caves prowled through the forests in search of their prey. A solemn stillness reigned everywhere except when broken by a confusion of forest sounds. Nature seemed to have heaped up her many bounties in this new land to make it a fit dwelling place for God's wild creatures.

The ruthless hand of civilized man had not yet disturbed the natural beauty and freshness of this wonderful scene. For unnumbered years the seasons came and went but there was none to plow, sow and reap as civilized men are used to do, but the forests, each year, yielded a rich harvest of wild fruits and nuts. No roar of engines, no rumble of machinery,

no hum of commerce nor ringing of church and school bells broke the stillness of this wild region. To this picturesque land of natural wealth and rugged beauty, nearly two hundred years ago, came the first white explorers, hunters, and settlers, with rifle and ax, to convert it into a land now inhabited by civilized men, and ruled by the arts and institutions of civilized life.

In this wilderness an equal battle had gone on for ages among the native tribes in their struggle for existence, but with the coming of the white man and his civilization all was changed. How Kentucky was explored and settled, how the Red Man was driven from his favorite hunting ground, how the noble forests fell with one continued groan before the woodsman's ax, how the wild animals and birds have disappeared before their destroyers, and how the whole face of nature has been changed by the hand of the white man, is told in the following pages.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What is the shape and area of Kentucky? What does Mr. Allen say about it? Describe the wild appearance of the State before the white man came. Name some plants, trees, birds and animals found in Kentucky that are not mentioned in the chapter. What has become of the Wilderness and its inhabitants?

CHAPTER II

THE MOUND BUILDERS

MANY years ago, possibly thousands of years before the white man came to Kentucky¹ it was inhabited by a people called "Mound Builders." Whether these ancient people were the ancestors of the American Indians, or a race that became extinct, or one that fled southwest and settled in Mexico, will probably never be known. Most historians, however, now believe that the Mound Builders were the ancestors of the American Indians, probably the Cherokees. But there are some reasons for believing that the Mound Builders may have been a superior race to that of the Indians.

Uniform tradition existed among the Indian tribes concerning a vanished race which was superior to them, upon whom confederated northern tribes waged war until all were killed or driven off. Some traditions report that these prehistoric people were white men, and that they had well cultivated fields, used metal tools and war implements, and possessed arts greatly superior to those of the Indian tribes. These

¹The origin of the name Kentucky is not definitely known. The Iroquois called it Kentake, meaning "The place of Meadows." The Shawnees named it Kan-tuck-ee, "At the head of the River." The name Kentucky was first given to the stream that now bears that name and was afterwards applied also to the State by the Pioneers. The Indians often called this region "The Dark and Bloody Ground" because it had been the scene of many battles and much bloodshed.

stories, told by the Indians to the first settlers, had been handed down from father to son for many generations, and must be regarded as mere tradition.

There were but few Indian towns in Kentucky when it was first explored, and many chiefs expressed surprise at the white man's settling "The Dark and



ANCIENT MOUND IN GREENUP COUNTY

Bloody Ground," which, according to their legends, witnessed the slaughter of a race, and over which they believed the spirits of the dead still brooded. Some have suggested, however, that these tales may have been told by the Indians to frighten the white men away from their favorite hunting ground.

Another reason for believing that the Mound Builders may have been a race different from the Indians is, that in many places in Kentucky and other states of the Mississippi Valley these primitive people

have left evidence of their existence in the form of mounds, fortifications, works of solid masonry, abandoned mines and buried mining tools. The construction of these mounds, their form, contents and location, show they were intended for burial places, temples, or fortresses. Like the structures of civilized nations, they were found in valleys or on fertile plains capable of supporting a dense population.

One of the most interesting monuments left by these ancient people is Grave Creek Mound, located twelve miles below Wheeling, West Virginia, on the left bank of the Ohio River. It is on an elevated table-land and is some seventy feet high, nine hundred feet in circumference, and equal in cubical contents to some of the pyramids of Egypt. A large tree growing on Grave Creek Mound in 1818 bore the date of 1734, and had several names carved on its bark. An excavation of this mound revealed rooms eight by twelve feet, and seven feet high. In one of them was found two human skeletons; on one of these no ornaments were found, but on the other were seven-hundred-fifty beads and an ivory ornament six inches long. In still another room was found a skeleton which had on copper rings, plates of mica, and many bone beads, besides numerous disks cut from shells. These things suggest that the rooms were the sepulchers of monarchs who were buried with a slave or some other person to accompany them to their "happy hunting grounds." The building of such a monument would have required thousands of men for many years, and suggests to us that some powerful monarch must have ruled these people and compelled them to labor. The Indians, as the

settlers knew them, were lazy, wandering tribes who lived in wigwams and were not disposed to work. Neither were any of these tribes found building mounds or other permanent structures at the coming of the white man.

“Monk’s Mound,” near East St. Louis, Illinois, is the largest known earthworks ever built up by human hands. For a time it was believed by many to be a natural formation, but recent excavations have shown it to have been erected by a prehistoric race.

There are numerous mounds in Montgomery County, Kentucky, in and around Mount Sterling, which derived its name from this fact. “Little Mountain” was a mound situated within the present limits of this town. There is a group of ancient mounds six miles southeast of Mount Sterling, some of them three to five hundred feet in circumference. Numerous other ancient earthworks are found throughout the State, many of them so constructed as to indicate they were used as fortifications. One of the most wonderful of these fortresses is “Indian Fort Mountain” in Madison County. On top of this mountain these ancient people built a huge stone wall three hundred and eighty-seven feet long. Part of the wall is built on a steep cliff so that it is sixty feet high on its outer side. The nature of the large stones shows they must have been quarried in the valley and carried to the summit. Heaps of smaller stones for hurling on the enemy below are still to be seen. The top of the mountain is level and contains about four hundred acres. At all the places where the builders believed the enemy could approach their stronghold, walls were

erected. The size and strength of the fort would indicate that it served as a great rallying ground for its builders.¹

That all mounds, of any considerable extent found in America, were located between the Appalachian and Rocky Mountains would further indicate that the ancient people residing in the Mississippi valley were different from those of other parts of North America. Many mounds and other forms of earthworks similar to those just described were found in Kentucky, which, according to Indian tradition, was the last rallying ground of a departed race.

Who these people were, their manner of life and what became of them is sealed in the voiceless mystery of the past. We only know that a race superior to the Indians, as the white man found them in Kentucky, had lived, loved and vanished, leaving only mute traces of their tenure of a land that is now the seat of a great civilization.

Prehistoric Animals.—The remains of the prehistoric elephant and the mammoth are also found in the State. Big Bone Lick in Boone County is noted as the graveyard of these extinct animals. Many tusks eight to ten feet long, thigh bones four or five feet long, and enormous teeth weighing eight to nine pounds have been found. These ancient animals had come to the lick for salt; and, through the ages, many perished, leaving their numerous skeletons buried in the salt marsh as hideous reminders of their having lived, sported, and died many thousands of years before the coming of the white man.

¹ Young, "Prehistoric Men of Kentucky," p. 75.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Who were the Mound Builders? What traditions existed among the Indians concerning them? What do historians think about them? Describe some of the mounds, fortifications and other works they have left. Can you account for the remains of the prehistoric animals?

CHAPTER III

THE INDIANS OF NORTH AMERICA

THE Indians of North America were divided into a number of great families, and each family was composed of different tribes. Among the tribes that claimed Kentucky as their hunting ground were the Chickasaws, Cherokees and Catawbas on the south; and the Shawnees, Wyandots and Delawares living north of the Ohio River. The various Indian families were generally alike in appearance, character, manners and customs.

Many theories have been advanced concerning the origin of the Indian, but nothing is certainly known save that he had lived and roamed over the American continent for many thousands of years before the coming of the white man. The Indian resembles the Mongolian race, but differs from it or from any other people, sufficiently to be classed separately as one of the five races of men. He was a child of the forest—a wild animal—and yet a man. He was physically strong but mentally weak; yet he had acquired a cunning that made him the equal of the white man in border warfare. He dwelt in the forest solitudes or upon



SOME INDIAN RELICS

1. Flint knife. 2. Spearhead. 3. Arrowhead. 4. Leaf-shaped implement. Use unknown. 5. Flint tool, probably chisel. 6. Plummet. Probably used as an ornament. 7. Banner stone. Probably used in some ceremonial. 8. Drill or perforator. 9. Stone bowl or mortar. 10. Pipe. 11. Pelt scraper for dressing skins. 12. Pestle. 13. Flint spade. 14. Grooved ax. 15. Celt or grooveless ax.

the vast plains, and usually in villages. He lived mostly by hunting and fishing, and but poorly cultivated a few food plants. Having very little grain and other foods to store, he was often overtaken by famine in his struggle for existence. He was tall, straight and athletic. His skin was dark red or copper colored. He had high cheek bones; small, dark, deep-set eyes; straight, black hair, and a scanty beard.

Religion.—The Indian believed in a Great Spirit who ruled the world, and in numerous other spirits, of evil or good, that inhabited the air and water, the forests and fields, and even the animals and plants. His religion was not a joy to him but an ever present fear that some impending punishment would overtake him if he displeased the Great Spirit. He carried charms, repeated secret words or prayers to protect himself against evil spirits. He worshiped the sun, moon and stars, and the great forces of nature inspired him with awe and fear. He prayed for success in the chase and for victory over his enemies. He did not believe in a future punishment, but thought a happy hunting ground awaited him beyond the grave. So, when he died, his bow and arrows, his tomahawk, and sometimes his faithful dog were buried with him. He often fasted and tortured himself, not because of his sins, but to enlist the Great Spirit's sympathy and aid. His code of honor governed his conduct only toward his own tribe and his friends, but it permitted him to steal from his enemies or even to murder them.

Home Life.—His home life was scarcely above that of the animal. He was lazy, and lived in filthy huts and wigwams. His house was a rude structure usually

built of poles and the skins of animals and could be easily moved from place to place. Here he slept and smoked, or sat at evening telling over and over the legends and myths of his tribe, or of his wonderful feats in war or the chase. Many of these legends of The Creation, of Hurakan (The Storm), Dawn, Light, and Darkness are truly poetic, and remind us of some of the myths of Ancient Greece.¹ Often a warrior would sit with a sad countenance for hours, his eyes bent to the ground, never uttering a word or giving any heed to those around him. Probably his superstitious view of nature with its mysterious forces which he could not understand, set a seal of sadness upon his spirit. To him diseases were evil spirits which the "medicine men," dressed in horrid disguises, endeavored to frighten away.

Character and Dress.—The Indian home seems to have been a happy one. Family quarrels were rare. The warrior required his squaw to do most of the work, but this was her portion, while he procured the game and went to war, which was the chief occupation of his savage life. He was stoical, and was trained from childhood to endure pain, and to suffer from cold and hunger without complaint. He was fond of play and had many games, but in some of these there was a self-inflicted pain. Notwithstanding his gloomy spirit, he laughed much and was fond of music, but his music was not rhythmical nor artistic, but weird and monotonous. Perhaps, by nature, he was not cruel, but he was trained from childhood to be cruel; besides, his

¹In "Hiawatha," Longfellow has preserved many of these myths. Read the poem.

life's business was to kill—to kill in the chase, to kill on the warpath, to live by killing. Often he tortured his captive enemies with the most fiendish cruelty, and laughed and jeered at them in their agonies, but would sometimes sacrifice his own life for his friends. His clothing was scant, consisting mostly of the skins of animals, and often limited to a girdle and breechcloth about the loins, moccasins for his feet, and a headdress of feathers. He was fond of ornaments, and decorated his body with crude paints, claws of birds and animals, strings of beads and bright colored shells.

Government.—The sachem was the judge and administrator of civil affairs, while the chiefs were chosen for military purposes on account of their courage or prowess as fighters. The office of the sachem was permanent, while that of the chief depended on his courage and cunning as a warrior. The chiefs were elected by the people, and even the women were allowed to vote. There were few laws, and for the most part, each man was a law unto himself—a savage free-man. The Indian is still a creature of his environment—a wild man who seems bound to his primitive life, and slow to adopt the manners of civilization. His government was a pure democracy, but very loosely organized. Originally, there were about five hundred thousand Indians in North America, but there is probably little more than half that number now. In wild life they were a hardy race, withstanding the rigor of the climate and many hardships. In the Great War they were good soldiers and many of them have become prominent in athletics, but unless the Indian

abandons his savage ways and accepts the white man's ideals and style of living, which will support a growing population, he is doomed to become extinct. The white man's civilization has done for him just what his civilization did for the race of mound builders before him.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Name some of the Indian tribes that claimed Kentucky. Describe the appearance of the Indians. What were their chief occupations? Describe their religion, manners and customs. What can you say of the home life of the Indians? Describe their character and manner of dress. What sort of government did they have?

PERIOD OF EXPLORATION AND SETTLEMENT

CHAPTER IV

EARLY EXPLORERS

SINCE Columbus discovered America almost two centuries had passed before any white men visited Kentucky. Columbus had set out to reach the East Indies by sailing west around the world, and for nearly two hundred years many explorers still endeavored to find a passage by water to the Pacific Ocean. These explorers did not know that America was a vast mainland separating the two great seas by an impassable barrier. This delusion had led to the discovery of America, and for several hundred years was an influence in the exploration of the continent. It is not surprising, therefore, to know that at least two of the earliest explorers to see Kentucky were in search of this western passage to the East Indies.

Robert de La Salle.—Of these, the first was Robert de La Salle, a Frenchman, who had migrated to Canada. Encouraged by tales told by the Indians of a stream that ran across the continent to the “Big Sea,” about 1669 he entered the Allegheny River near

its source, passed down it into the Ohio, and down the Ohio as far as the present site of Louisville. "In making this journey," says Colonel Reuben T. Durrett, "he was the first discoverer of Kentucky from the Big Sandy to the rapids of the Ohio, and was the first white man whose eyes looked eastward from the beautiful river to the Bluegrass Land which forms the Garden Spot of the State."¹

Captain Thomas Batts.—In 1671, Captain Thomas Batts, by the authority of Governor Berkeley of Virginia, was sent out with a party in search of a water route which would lead to the Pacific Ocean. Whether this party actually entered the territory of Kentucky is not known, but they crossed the mountains and, probably, saw that region of the State which lies along the Big Sandy River. Thus the French and the English, the two great national rivals in the conquest of the New World, were the first to push their claims, by right of discovery, into the wilderness of Kentucky.

In 1673, Colonel Abraham Wood of Virginia sent out a trading and exploring expedition among the Cherokee Indians. James Needham, the leader, was killed and a young man, Gabriel Arthur, was made a prisoner. Arthur became friendly with the Indians and accompanied them on many of their expeditions. On one of these, in 1674, he traveled with a party to a point near the northeastern part of Kentucky and possibly returned to the Cherokee village by the "Warrior's Path" which passes north and south across the eastern end of the State. Through the in-

¹ More recent research shows that La Salle's explorations probably did not extend to Kentucky.

fluence of a friendly chief he returned to Colonel Wood in June, 1674, and gave an account of his thrilling experience and fortunate escape. Thus it appears that Gabriel Arthur, a Virginian, may have been the first white man to set foot on Kentucky soil.¹

During the next seventy years there was no organized effort to explore the Western Wilderness, and, except for the chance wanderings of a few white men, it remained an unknown wild. Even the vague knowledge of this region, however, had caused the settlers east of the mountains to cast wistful glances toward the West. The people of Virginia suspected that some day this country would become valuable to them, and that the French would probably dispute their claims.

Early Land Companies.—In her efforts to colonize America, England had issued land grants to her colonies. Following this plan, some of the leading citizens of Virginia organized land companies, the object of which was to buy up vast tracts of the western wilderness, and influence bands of settlers to occupy portions of them by issuing to them free grants of land. After the settlements had been made, the remainder of the land rose in value and was sold at a profit to later settlers. It was an old real-estate scheme for getting rich; a scheme which survives to this day. While it was selfish it has been one of the causes of the rapid development of all the territorial borders of our great country. Virginia encouraged the plan, for it promised the most successful means of developing her vast, western claims.

¹ Dr. Willard R. Jillson, "The Discovery of Kentucky." See Register, Kentucky Historical Society, 1922, Vol. 20, No. 59.

Among the most important of these companies, in the early development of Kentucky, were the "Loyal Company" and the "Ohio Company."

Loyal Company.—In March, 1750, the Loyal Company sent out Dr. Thomas Walker of Albemarle County, Virginia, who with five companions passed



FIRST HOUSE BUILT IN KENTUCKY

This log cabin was erected on Swan Lake near Barbourville by Dr. Thomas Walker in 1750. Copy of an oil painting owned by J. A. Owen.

through a gap in the mountains which they named, after the Duke of Cumberland, "Cumberland Gap." Through this mountain pass they entered southeastern Kentucky, which had never been visited before by white men. They came to a stream which they named Cumberland River, descended it to the present site of Barbourville, Knox County, and selected a place for

settlement, cleared land and built a log house which is thought to have been the first house erected by white men in the State. Shortly after its completion, Dr. Walker and his party, frightened by roving bands of Indians, deserted their "settlement." Walker's party explored the region to the headwaters of the Kentucky River, killed many buffalo, elk, deer, bear, and other game, which they found in abundance; and after six month's wandering in the wilderness they returned to Virginia.

Ohio Company.—In October, 1750, the Ohio Company sent out Christopher Gist, "to search out lands upon the river Ohio . . . down as low as the Falls thereof." Following an Indian trail, Gist, accompanied only by a negro servant, reached the Ohio, and after exploring some territory north of it, passed down the river to within fifteen miles of the Falls. Seeing numerous signs of hostile Indians, he wisely abandoned his plan to visit the Falls, and turned back to the Kentucky River. From the top of Pilot Knob, in what is now Powell County, he saw, as far as the eye could see, a stretch of wooded country marked here and there by winding streams that bathed fertile shores which were, as yet, only the hunting ground of savage tribes, and the scene of their bloody combats. Gist returned to his frontier abode on the Yadkin in the summer of 1751, after having seen parts of Ohio and some of the best lands of Kentucky. There were numerous other adventurers who probably explored and hunted in Kentucky at an early date. Among these were James McBride who passed down the Ohio about 1754, to the mouth of the Kentucky River and

probably explored part of this region. In 1767, John Finley and some companions passed through the mountain gaps and hunted in the State. They gave a glowing report of the Kentucky wilderness, and two years later Finley piloted Daniel Boone and his four companions into the territory.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

How long was it after the discovery of America before Kentucky was settled? What led to the early exploration of Kentucky? Who were some of the first explorers? Name some of the early land companies and tell what effect they had on the exploration and settlement of Kentucky. What explorers were sent out by each of these companies?

CHAPTER V

VANGUARD OF THE PIONEERS

THE reports of Walker and Gist to their land companies give us the first glimpse of Kentucky "as it came from the hands of the Creator." These reports, and those of some adventurous hunters who faced the hardships and dangers of the wilderness beyond the mountains, aroused the keen interest of the people of Virginia. Robert Dinwiddie, a member of the Ohio Company, became Governor of Virginia in 1752. In the interest of his country, and probably also through self-interest, he sought to hold all of the Allegheny Valley for Virginia, by right of her Charter in 1609. According to the vague provisions of this Charter, the Virginia territory was to reach "up into the land throughout from sea to sea west and northwest." Gist

had reported that the French were encroaching upon Virginia's claims in the Ohio Valley. Accordingly, in the winter of 1753, Governor Dinwiddie selected George Washington, a young surveyor in the employment of Lord Fairfax, to undertake a perilous trip through the wilderness, to treat with the Indian tribes, and to warn the Frenchmen not to trespass upon English territory. Washington, who was only twenty-one years old, piloted by Gist and Half-King, a friendly Indian chief, after encountering many hardships and dangers, made the trip in safety.

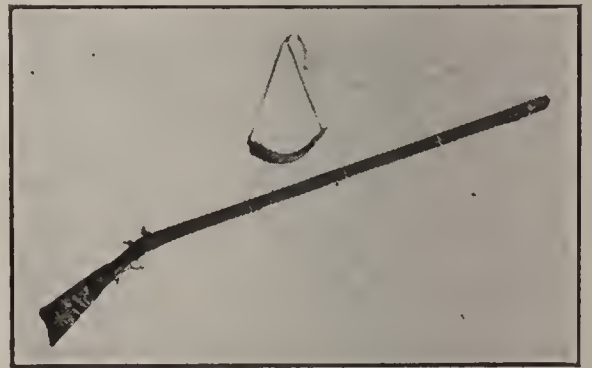
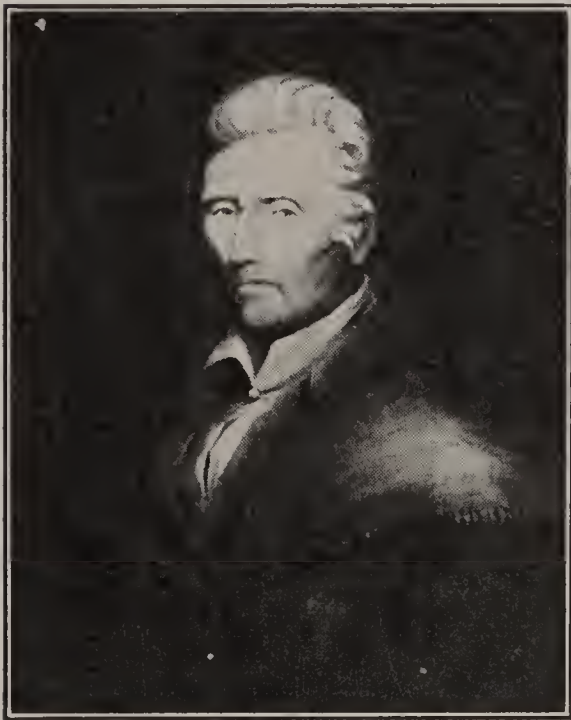
French and English Claims.—Washington found St. Pierre, the French Commandant, at a post near Lake Erie and was received kindly and with many polite bows. But in reply to Governor Dinwiddie's protest St. Pierre said: "I am here by the orders of my General, and I entreat you, sir, not to doubt one moment, but that I am determined to conform myself to them with all the exactness and resolution that can be expected from the best officer." This defiant answer of the French meant war. The movements of both the French and the English to hold the Ohio Valley, of which Kentucky was a part, had now begun. The long struggle, known in Europe as The Seven Years' War, and in America as The French and Indian War, followed. This conflict practically drove the French from American soil, and laid the foundation for a great English-speaking people in Kentucky and in other states that have been carved out of the Western Wilderness. At the close of the French and Indian War, the Mississippi River became the acknowledged western boundary of the English colonies. During this

war the land companies and pioneers had made little effort to settle Kentucky, but at its close, interest in the settlement of this region again revived.

Proclamation of George III.—Following the treaty of Paris at the close of this war, in 1763, King George the Third of England, issued a proclamation which provided that British possessions south of Canada and west of the Allegheny Mountains should be kept as an Indian Reservation, and should be exempt from settlement. This probably was done more because of the King's fear of the growing power and independent spirit of the colonies than through any love and good will he bore the savages. By the King's decree, two Indian agents were appointed to make the surveys and establish the boundaries between the colonies and the Indian reservation. Fortunately for Kentucky, Sir William Johnson, the agent for the Northern district, violated his instructions and ran his line down the Ohio River to the mouth of the Tennessee, and made the Tennessee the boundary line between the Indian lands and the Kentucky territory. So it came about, that all that portion of the Kentucky territory lying east of the Tennessee River was thrown open for immediate settlement. This was one of the circumstances that led to the earlier colonization of Kentucky which made it the "Pioneer State of the West," and the fifteenth to be admitted into the Union.

Following the French and Indian War, English colonies east of the Appalachian Mountains again turned their attention to exploring and settling the territory to the west. The French had been conquered, and the wilderness was untenanted except by scattered bands

of Indians and French traders. The hour had struck for the forward movement of an Anglo-Saxon civilization in the West. As already related, the survey made under the proclamation of King George the Third did not apply to that portion of Kentucky lying east of the Tennessee River. Besides, the bordermen of the eastern colonies resented the King's decree and doubt-



DANIEL BOONE, AND HIS
TRUSTY RIFLE AND POWDER
HORN

less would have settled Kentucky in spite of it, for they had already begun to think and act for themselves.

Daniel Boone.—Pioneers, schooled in the hardships of border life, waited in the valleys of Virginia, Pennsylvania and the Carolinas for a leader—and the leader came, as it always happens in human emergencies. Daniel Boone, the “prince of pioneers,” was born in Pennsylvania about 1734, and while yet a boy, was brought with the rest of his family to the Yadkin Valley in North Carolina. He married while young, built a log hut, cleared land, did some blacksmithing

and a little farming. The call of the wild, however, unfitted him for a quiet home-life. Hunting and exploring and the wild independent forest life were his greatest delights. He was tall, spare and sinewy, and seemed knitted together with muscles of steel. The most toilsome journeys did not tire him, and he endured the greatest hardships with apparent joy. He was quiet, thoughtful, patient and daring, and had the poise and self-reliance that carried him safely through many perils. Nature seemed to have combined in him those qualities that especially fitted him for the hazards of pioneer life. Boone had but little education but possessed a winning personality that made him a leader of men. For him, the stage was set in the wilderness of Kentucky, and how well he played his part will be seen as our story progresses.

Boone had spent many years hunting in the forests and on the streams of western North Carolina, and had become famous as a hunter and backwoodsman. He was often absent from home for many weeks, exploring and hunting alone in the trackless forests. It must have been during the lonely hours of these long journeys that he came to believe himself to be an instrument "ordained of God to settle the wilderness," and as he further says, "to wander through the Wilderness of America in quest of the country of Kentucky."

In May, 1769, Boone, with a party of five other fearless hunters, set out from their abode on the Yadkin River in North Carolina, on a hunting and exploring expedition in Kentucky. There are reasons to believe that Boone was also acting as agent to spy out the

land for other settlers who were dreaming of new homes in Kentucky. "We proceeded successfully," he says, "after a long and fatiguing journey through a mountainous wilderness, in a westward direction; on the seventh day of June following, we found ourselves on the Red River . . . and from the top of an eminence, saw with pleasure the beautiful level of Kentucky." ¹

Boone's party moved their camp from place to place and for some time hunted unmolested. Finally Boone and John Stewart, one of the company, left the main camp to hunt on the Kentucky River and were captured by Indians. After seven days of captivity they escaped in the night and returned to their camp to find it plundered and their companions gone, with nothing left to tell the tale of their fate. Left alone in the heart of the wilderness, in mid-winter, destitute of provisions, and with but little powder, which they had taken from the Indians when they escaped, they still remained; "waiting for they knew not what, but happy in the beauty and wildness of their surroundings."

Becoming alarmed by the long absence of his brother, Squire Boone left his home on the Yadkin, accompanied by a single companion, and went in search of him. Owing to the wonderful woodcraft of Squire Boone and his companion, they came upon Boone and Stewart in January, 1770.

Death of Stewart.—Shortly after this, the party was again attacked by Indians and Stewart was killed.

¹Red River is a branch of the Kentucky River. Boone's view was from some point near the junction of Clark, Powell and Estill Counties.



DANIEL BOONE AND COMPANIONS VIEW THE BEAUTIFUL LEVEL OF KENTUCKY

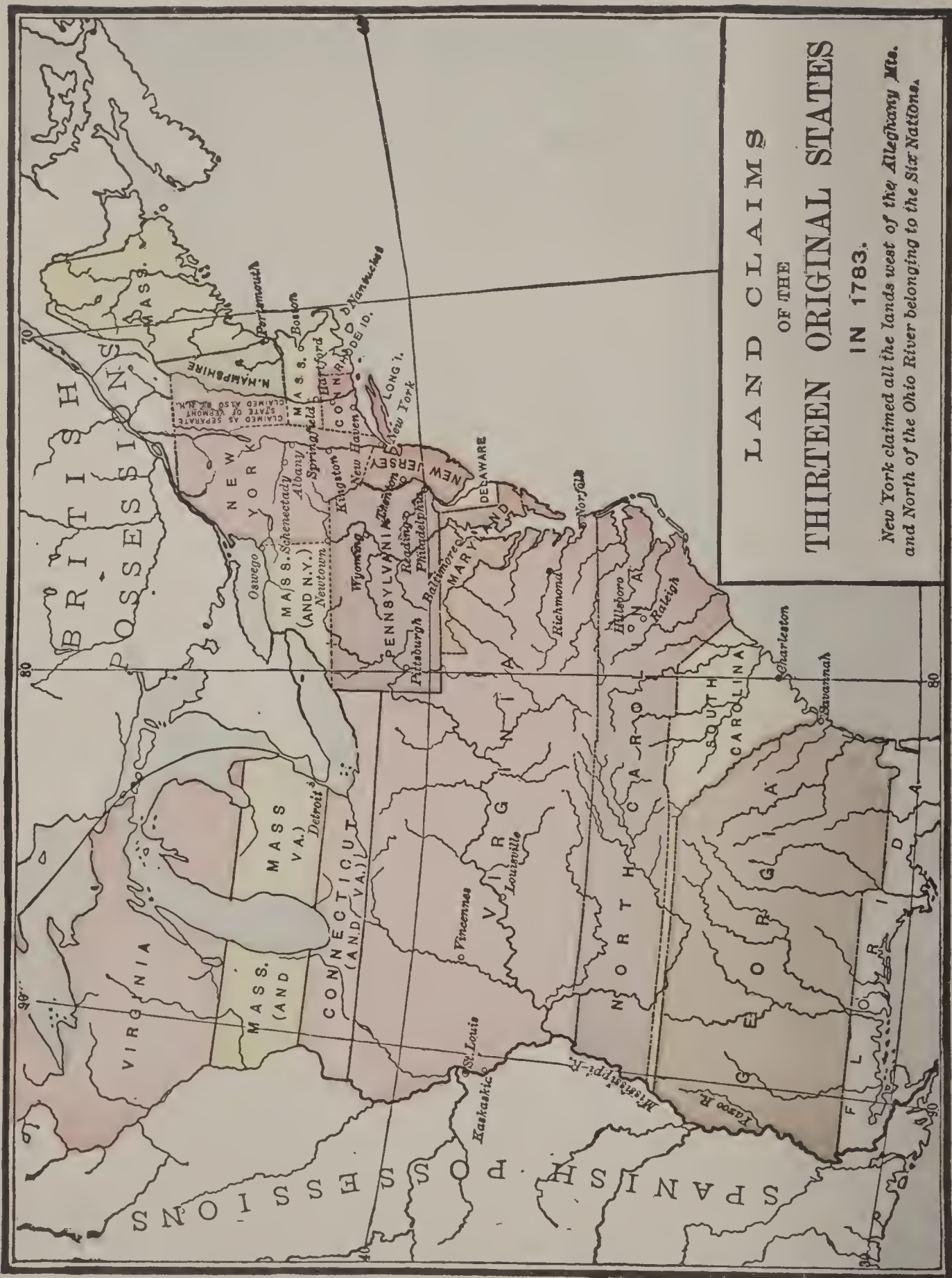
From a mural painting in the State Capitol.

Squire Boone's companion wandered from the camp and was lost or returned alone to his home. The two brothers were now left alone in the midst of many dangers with nothing but wild fruits, roots and nuts, and the game they killed, to live upon. Their supply of powder also was running low, and it became necessary for Squire Boone to return to the settlement for provisions and ammunition. Left alone, Daniel Boone says: "I confess I never before was under greater necessity of exercising philosophy and fortitude." But his loneliness seems to have been brief, for he says further, "Through an uninterrupted scene of sylvan pleasure I spent the time until the 27th day of July (1770) following, when my brother, to my great felicity, met me, according to appointment, at our old camp."

Warned by signs of hostile Indians, the two brothers turned southward, hunting and exploring along the Cumberland River, but returned north in March, 1771, and selected a site on the Kentucky River favorable for settlement. After an absence of two years, Boone says, "I returned to my family with a determination to bring them as soon as possible to live in Kentucky."¹ Accordingly, he and his brother packed a load of peltries on the two horses that Squire Boone had brought with him, and returned to their families in the Yadkin Valley, North Carolina.

The Long Hunters.—While Boone was wandering alone in Kentucky, another party of forty hunters from Virginia, led by Colonel James Knox, were

¹Quotations are from "Autobiography of Daniel Boone," by John Filson.



hunting and exploring in the State. They had dogs, traps and pack-horses, and each man a hunter's equipment. They established a central camp in what is now Wayne County, near the Cumberland River. Then they separated into smaller parties that were to meet at the central camp once every five weeks to deposit their pelts and to plan future movements. But the lure of the forests broke up the expedition into small bands, each bent upon its own object. Colonel Knox, with nine of the most dauntless hunters, pushed deeper into the wilderness, hunting and exploring in what is now Green, Barren, Hart, and adjoining counties. Some of these brave fellows disappeared forever in the forests, others were killed by Indians, but many returned to their homes after an absence of two years. From the length of time these men were absent, they have been called "The Long Hunters."

The stories related by The Long Hunters concerning the abundance of game, the beauty and fertility of Kentucky, spread among the people along the border and aroused the interest of many bold woodsmen. No immediate settlement was attempted, but the first step had been taken by the white man to people the wilderness.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Who was Robert Dinwiddie and what did he do to lay claim to Kentucky? By what right did Virginia claim Kentucky? (See opposite map.) What caused the breaking out of the French and Indian war in America? What was the result of the war? What proclamation was made by George III? Explain why the Kentucky territory was thrown open to settlement. Give a sketch of Daniel Boone. Give an account of his trips to Kentucky. Who were the "Long Hunters"?

CHAPTER VI

THE PIONEER AND HIS INDIAN FOE

FROM 1771 to 1773 no attempt at the settlement of Kentucky was made, but the spirit of unrest and ad-

venture among the bordermen of the colonies was growing. Plans were being formed for the successful conquest and settlement of the State.

While we wait on the forward movement of the backwoodsmen it is well to give a brief sketch of the hunter-pioneer, and of the savage foe he was about to meet and overcome in the wilderness.

Character of the Pioneers.

—The first hunters and settlers in Kentucky were chiefly bordermen of Virginia, Pennsylvania, and North Carolina who had been schooled in the dangers and hardships of backwoods life. They differed in thoughts, habits, and



WINNERS OF THE WEST

With his rifle and ax the hardy pioneer won the great West

manner of life from those who lived along the coast and in the older and more densely settled communities. They were mostly Americans by birth, but of a mixed race, being chiefly of English and Scotch-Irish descent. They were backwoodsmen by choice and preferred the wild freedom of the border to the comforts and social restraints of towns and villages. "A lonely house in the middle of a great farm was their ideal, and they attained it even before it could be done with safety."¹ They were law abiding but rebelled against that type of laws which limited their personal freedom. To their bold and adventurous spirit were added years of training in forest and mountain life, which developed an original and self-reliant people. Their wild, free life unfitted them for regular soldiers, because they were unused to obeying orders, but alone in the forest they were more than a match for their cunning savage foe. For the most part, they were large, robust and sinewy, strong-limbed and brave-hearted, and always ready for a challenge to physical endurance. They were a grim race with a grim purpose and yet fond of coarse pleasures. Beneath their moody exterior lay a spirit terrible in its intensity and even cruel when once aroused. Though many of them were uneducated, they had that training which fitted them best for the task of subduing the wilderness with the ax, and driving back the savage with their trusty rifles. Though rough and uncouth, they were kind and generous, but when enraged by unprovoked Indian attacks they sometimes adopted savage methods and even scalped their fallen foe.

¹ Shaler, "Kentucky, A Pioneer Commonwealth," p. 116. ✓

The dress of the pioneer was well adapted to the needs of his rugged forest life. He wore a hunting shirt, or loose frock, with cape made from dressed deer skins, and leggings and moccasins of the same material. Often the cap, shirt, and leggings were adorned with fringes. A strong leather belt encircled the body, from which was suspended an ax or tomahawk, hunting knife, and bullet pouch and other necessary equipment. A leather thong about the neck and shoulder held the powder horn in its place at his side. Pouches for provisions, or other necessary articles, were made in the frock. A cap made from a coon skin or some coarse woven material covered the head. His long, heavy, and deadly rifle was borne upon his shoulder, or carried in his hand as the hazard of his position might require. Rugged, prudent, but fearless, he slipped through the passes of the Allegheny Mountains, or floated down the Ohio to Kentucky, to meet a cunning and treacherous foe in a contest for supremacy.

A Crafty Foe.—Few Indian villages were found in Kentucky, but it was claimed by many tribes as their hunting ground.¹ The Kentucky hunter and pioneer, therefore, were brought into conflict with the hunting and war parties of many tribes. These consisted of small bands which stole silently through the dark forest and dense canebrakes, or lay in ambush ready to fall upon the white man unawares. Often they would stalk the hunters or settlers, wait for a favorable opportunity to attack, and seldom expose themselves to

¹ The last village, called Lower Town, situated south of Portsmouth, Ohio, was swept away by a flood prior to the settlement of the State.

danger. To meet such a foe, it became necessary for the white man to use Indian tactics, which many of them did, even more skillfully than their enemies. The Indian was brave and heroic, strong, fleet-footed, and cunning, but his ideas of warfare forbade his exposing himself in open fight or regular army order. When once engaged in battle, each warrior was his own officer and soldier, and fought according to the traditions of his tribe. If the tide of battle turned against him, he escaped into the forest. None but a hardy race of pioneers, schooled in Indian modes of warfare, could have defeated the Red Man on his own ground.

The Indian's dress and equipment were suited to a forest warfare. The color of his body, and such scant clothing as he wore, so blended with his surroundings as to make him almost invisible. With his tomahawk, bow and arrow, and rifles which he had purchased from white traders, he met the pioneer in the wilderness, to dispute further encroachment upon his favorite hunting ground. The story of the many cruel tragedies that finally drove the Indian from Kentucky, still farther toward the setting sun, would fill volumes. But the final defeat of the Indian was certain, as is always the case when the superior intelligence of the civilized man is pitted against the savage. That the Indian was often cruelly and unjustly treated, must be admitted. True, he was a savage, yet a fellow human that deserved justice and mercy from his superior white brother. But he refused to keep his treaties, and to adopt civilized modes of living, consequently he became a victim of the destroying influence of the white man's civilization.

Result of the Conflict.—From the time the Anglo-Saxon first planted his feet upon the American continent the land tenure of the Indian was doomed. The irresistible westward march of progress required the lands the Indians so sparsely tenanted, and which he fought so valiantly to hold under his savage sway. For unnumbered centuries his forefathers had tenanted the forests and prairies of America and their graves hallowed the soil. By all the rights and traditions of the savage and of civilized man, it was his own, his native land, yet it is not easy to see how he could have been permitted to retain his savage control against the needs of civilization.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Who were the first hunters and settlers in Kentucky? Where did they come from? Describe the character of these pioneers. Contrast the pioneer and his Indian Foe. What was the final result of the long conflict between the Indian and the white man? Question for class debate: Resolved: the Indian was unjustly treated by the white man.

CHAPTER VII

ATTEMPTED SETTLEMENT OF KENTUCKY

BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT

As we have already seen, the border people of the eastern colonies had become excited by the reports of the beauty and fertility of the territory beyond the mountains, and many of them desired to establish homes there. It must be remembered that before and during the Revolution Virginia made her charter claims to lands far beyond the Alleghenies, which included what is now Kentucky; at the close of the Revolution, a still larger area in the Ohio Valley was claimed by right of conquest of the Northwest Territory.

Attempted Settlement.—In September, 1773, Daniel Boone, with his own and five other families, set out from the Yadkin Valley, North Carolina, to settle in Kentucky. A company of forty other men joined the party on the way. They drove their hogs and cattle before them, and carried their baggage and provisions on pack-horses. When near Cumberland Gap they were suddenly attacked by Indians and six of the party were killed, among these was Boone's son. The Indians, however, were driven off and the slain members of the party were buried where they had fallen. The settlers' visions of happy homes in the wilderness, for the time, had vanished. The Boones

and other fearless members of the party desired to push on, but finally were persuaded to return; some went to their own homes, and others to those of friends on the Clinch River. So great was the discouragement that no further effort was made at settlement during the year.



AN IMPROVER'S CABIN

Squatters and Surveyors.—With the coming of the spring of 1774 the hopes of the people revived, and numerous plans were made for colonizing Kentucky. Many adventurers bent upon securing land by the claims of “improvers’ cabins,” pushed across the mountains, squatted upon the land, and erected their shacks as evidence of “settlement,” and proof of

their claims. In May, 1773, Lord Dunmore, Governor of Virginia, sent out a party under Captain Thomas Bullitt, accompanied by James Harrod, to locate bounty lands for Virginia soldiers. Captain Bullitt left Fort Pitt and passed down the Ohio to the mouth of the Kanawha, where he met another party under the McAfee brothers, which in turn had been joined by Hancock Taylor. The numerous surveyors now coming to the State naturally excited the Indians, for they had observed that the surveyor was followed by the settler. At the mouth of the Kanawha Captain Bullitt separated from the others and went alone to visit the town of Chillicothe for a peaceful parley with the Indians. The red men were surprised when Bullitt suddenly appeared unannounced, but were greatly pleased with his friendly and flattering proposals. By the promise of many presents, he obtained their consent to a peaceful occupation of Kentucky. After an absence of thirteen days on this lonely and hazardous trip, Bullitt joined his men at Limestone Creek, which is now the site of Maysville. At this time, and later, came other surveyors; among them were James Douglas, John and Levi Todd, who were deputies acting under Colonel William Preston, the official surveyor of this District. These and other adventurous men were the forerunners of a coming tide of immigrants. They were as spies searching through a goodly country, seeking the location of fertile lands and favorable sites for settlements. So great were the number of these that the Indians became alarmed at this encroachment upon their hunting grounds. Notwithstanding the land had been ceded to the white

men by the chiefs at the Council at Fort Stanwix, six years before, the Indians still refused to forfeit their claims to it. So the Indian tribes called a grand council to make plans to drive back the white adventurers and surveyors who were laying off and occupying their favorite hunting ground.

Dunmore's War.—Governor Dunmore, foreseeing an Indian war, decided to send Daniel Boone to warn the settlers and surveyors of their danger. In June, 1774, in company with Michael Stoner, Boone started for the Falls of the Ohio. In sixty days he traveled eight hundred miles through the wilderness, and returned with a party of adventurers who had heeded his warning. A few of the more daring remained and were killed or driven off by bands of savages. By this time, Governor Dunmore had called to arms a force of three thousand regulars and volunteers to meet the Indian invasion. Dunmore, as chief in command, assembled the main force at Fort Pitt, now Pittsburg. He appointed Boone to take charge of three forts on the southwestern border. To the gallant Indian fighter, General Andrew Lewis, he gave the command of the left wing of his army, which was to meet the main body under Governor Dunmore at Point Pleasant, on the Ohio River. General Lewis led his army of eleven hundred hunters and Indian fighters across the mountains to the mouth of the Great Kanawha, where he camped, to await the arrival of Dunmore's army.

Battle of Point Pleasant.—In the meantime, the fierce Shawnees, led by their great chief, Cornstalk, and aided by the Miamis, Delawares, Wyandots and other northern tribes, had burst like a storm upon the outly-

ing posts of Virginia, burning, pillaging, and murdering. Cornstalk was probably informed by his scouts of the movements of the armies of Dunmore and Lewis, and, therefore, resolved to attack before the two armies were united. On the early morning of October 10, 1774, a small hunting party belonging to General Lewis' army suddenly came upon a large party of Indians and was fired upon and one man killed. The survivors fled to camp and gave the alarm. Instantly the drums beat to arms and in a short time a bloody battle began. At first, the Americans were driven back and two officers, Colonel Lewis and Colonel Flemming, were killed. Colonel Field, however, came to their rescue with a fresh regiment that, for a time, turned the tide of battle, but he too was slain. At this point, General Lewis sent Isaac Shelby and other officers with a company of men to attack the Indians in the rear. Shelby succeeded in gaining the rear of the savages, unobserved, and furiously attacked them. Thinking re-enforcements had arrived, the Indians withdrew across the Ohio, leaving the field in possession of the white men. Cornstalk and his braves fought with the utmost courage, and did not yield the field until the late afternoon. This engagement, known as the battle of Point Pleasant, also called The Battle of the Great Kanawha, was one of the bloodiest of all the Indian wars. The Americans had seventeen officers killed or wounded and about seventy-five men killed, and over one hundred wounded. The Indian losses were probably not so heavy. Many men, afterwards notable in the pioneer history of Kentucky, took part in the battle; among these was Isaac Shelby,

afterwards first governor of the State. Governor Dunmore, in the meantime, had crossed the Ohio and carried the war into the enemy's country. The Indians were disheartened, and a treaty was made by which they surrendered all their claims to Kentucky; but like most of their treaties, it was not faithfully kept. However, the defeat of the Indians so humbled them, that for several years the Kentucky settlers were not troubled except by small war bands. By the time large, organized bodies were led against the pioneers they were strongly established in their rustic fortresses and were able to withstand the attacks. Governor Dunmore's war made possible the settlement of Kentucky at a time when a guard on our Revolutionary frontier was greatly needed.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

To what State did Kentucky belong during the Revolution? (See map, opposite page 29.) Give an account of attempted settlement of Kentucky. Name some of the first surveyors and squatters and tell what they did. What led to Lord Dunmore's War? What was the result? Describe the battle of Point Pleasant.

CHAPTER VIII

THE FIRST SETTLEMENT OF KENTUCKY

THE TRANSYLVANIA COMPANY

First Permanent Settlement.—As early as June, 1774, Captain James Harrod and thirty companions began a settlement at Harrodstown, and still other settlements were started at Boiling Springs and St. Asaph's, better known as Logan's Station. When Boone and Stoner arrived the year before to warn these settlers against the Indians, they deserted their cabins but were among the first to return after the treaty with the Indians. Many of them had taken part in the bloody battle of Point Pleasant. They now returned, re-enforced by others who were eager to found homes in the wilderness. Harrod and his companions re-occupied their village by March 15, 1775, after which it was never again completely abandoned. Thus Harrodstown, now called Harrodsburg, became the first permanent settlement in Kentucky. James McAfee and a company of men had preceded Harrod's company four days, and re-established their claims at what was afterwards called McAfee's Station, located just below Harrodsburg, on Salt River. The McAfee company abandoned their settlement April 11, and started home to Virginia. It was some of these men whom Henderson's company met, as related on a following page. The red men were spreading terror among the settlers, so that none but the more courageous dared

to remain. After the desertion of the McAfee Station, a few of these settlers remained at Harrodsburg to look after their land claims. Many roving, restless spirits who came to Kentucky for the novelty of adventure, or seeking great wealth, were unwilling to pay the price, hence, were quick to return to their homes upon the appearance of Indian attacks. The wilderness needed that sterner grit out of which great men are made and states are built.

Western Fever.—The treaty made with the Indians after the Battle of Point Pleasant gave promise of a peaceful settlement of the much-coveted land of Kentucky. The Cherokees living south of the State still held a shadowy claim to it, which, as we shall see later, was also settled by treaty. Lord Dunmore's War, for the time being, had reduced the dangers of navigation on the Ohio, and checked the attacks on the settlers of Kentucky. Had the head-strong young warriors kept the treaty, the story of the occupation of Kentucky would not have been such a bloody one. On their return home Lord Dunmore's soldiers told many stories of the beautiful and fertile land of the wilderness country, so that the minds of many were fired with a desire to go over the mountains and possess the promised land. "Western fever," for a time, became quite epidemic. The covetous eyes of the land shark, as well as those of the honest settler who desired to build a home in the wilderness, were alike turned toward the West. Many of these, as we shall see, met bitter disappointment, and some met tragic deaths in their efforts to found a home in Kentucky.

Proprietary Government.—As related in Chapter IV, many of the colonies of America had proprietary governors; that is, men who had secured charter rights to take up large grants of land and induce people to settle upon them under their management. In this way they would become the governors of the colonies and by selling off the land in small tracts would become rich. Colonel Richard Henderson, a native of Virginia, who at this time was living in North Carolina, organized a company for the purpose of taking up a large tract of the Kentucky territory and establishing over it a proprietary government. Henderson was an able but ambitious man, and had dreams of obtaining great wealth and power in the new country. The company was composed of Henderson and eight associates, all of whom were able and worthy men, but were influenced by a desire for wealth and power. The name “Transylvania,” meaning beyond the woods, was given to the settlement as well as to the company.

Treaty of Sycamore Shoals.—As soon as the treaty was made with the Indian tribes north of the Ohio, following the Battle of Point Pleasant, Henderson arranged for a grand council of all the “Big Chiefs” and warriors of the Cherokee Nation to meet at Sycamore Shoals on the Watauga River. About twelve hundred Indians met Henderson and his party, and after much feasting and high-sounding talk, a treaty was made March 17, 1775, giving to The Transylvania Company all the lands lying along and between the Ohio, Kentucky, and Cumberland Rivers. This vast tract of fertile land comprised most of the present state of Kentucky and a part of Tennessee. The Indians re-

ceived 10,000 pounds in English money, which was paid, mainly, in pleasing articles of merchandise. Henderson, now believing that these Indian treaties would open the wilderness to peaceful settlement, at once sent Boone with twenty-nine other fearless, ax and rifle-bearing men to blaze a trail from the Holston River to the new possessions. Boone's party was twice attacked by Indians before reaching their settlement, and four men were killed and several wounded. Sufficient time had not elapsed for these roving bands of savages to learn of the treaty that had just been made, otherwise Boone's party might have escaped these attacks. However, Boone and his heroic band of pathfinders pressed on, opening through the forests a "trace" that afterwards became the famous "Wilderness Road." They reached the Kentucky River April 1, 1775, and began at once to build a fort which was afterwards named in honor of Boone, Boonesborough. Boone and his party found themselves in constant danger from Indian attacks, and sent a messenger to Colonel Henderson urging him to "come or send as soon as possible," and saying, "that now is the time to keep the country whilst we are in it."

In the meantime, Henderson and his associates had organized a company of about forty well-armed men with equipment for making a settlement. Their goods, provisions, and implements were carried over the rugged trail on pack-horses. On April 7, they met the runner sent by Boone to notify Henderson of the Indian attacks upon his party, and the next day they encountered a party of forty, panic-stricken men fleeing from Kentucky on account of the attacks of the

savages. April 16, Henderson's Company came upon the McAfee party of nineteen, most of whom were likewise fleeing from the perils of the wilderness. Of these Henderson persuaded the McAfees and a few others to return with his company. Notwithstanding these evil omens and many dangers that hourly beset them, they seemed not to waver from their purpose but pressed rapidly forward under their dauntless leader. They arrived at Boonesborough on April 20, 1775, the day following the Battle of Lexington, which is memorable as the beginning of the Revolutionary War. Henderson says of his reception, "We were saluted by a running fire of about twenty-five guns, all that were then at the fort—men appeared in high spirits and much rejoiced at our arrival." Thus were Boonesborough and Harrodsburg founded, and a strong Anglo-Saxon grip upon the West was tightened for all future time.

The Transylvania Settlement.—The settlers reached Harrodsburg and Boonesborough at the high tide of spring, when the trees were in leaf, the wild flowers blooming, and the songs of many birds seemed to welcome them. Beautiful Kentucky had on her best gown to receive the pioneers. Their hopes were high, notwithstanding the many dangers that threatened them. Henderson's party immediately set about building a larger fort than the one Boone had begun. It was rectangular in shape, being about two hundred and fifty feet long and half as wide. The log cabins were arranged in straight rows along the outer line of the fort, and the spaces between them filled with heavy upright timbers set in the ground to form a stockade. At each corner, a two story block-house served as a

bastion from which the fort could be successfully defended. The outer walls of the block-houses and the stockades were loop-holed to admit the guns of the defenders. There were heavy wooden gates with great bars to close them. The roofs were covered with rough boards held in place by poles which were bound with withes or fastened by wooden pins to the rafters. In time of danger, the cattle and other animals were kept in the open space inside the fort. The buildings were rough and strong, but not very comfortable. This, and similar rustic fortresses that were erected by the pioneers, made it possible to withstand the Indian attacks and settle the wilderness. Henderson at once set up a land office and began to survey and sell the lands to the settlers at thirteen and one-third cents an acre.

Dunmore's Proclamation.—Now the reader should remember that The Transylvania Company had settled territory that was a part of Virginia, and that they had no claim to it except that based upon the purchase they had made from the Cherokees a few months before at Sycamore Shoals. Governor Dunmore of Virginia issued a proclamation denouncing “one Richard Henderson and other disorderly persons” because they had “set up a claim to lands of the crown within the limits of the colony.” This action of the Governor caused the settlers to resist the right of The Transylvania Company to sell the land, and to deny its power to make a good title to it. Henderson and Company, however, did not heed the Governor’s proclamation but proceeded with great diligence to establish a settlement and parcel out the land.

The First Legislative Assembly.—Still another obstacle stood in the way of The Transylvania Company. Other companies had preceded the Boonesborough settlers by several weeks and had laid first claims upon some of the land. These claims conflicted with Henderson's and became the source of much contention. The pioneers had been accustomed to take up land or abandon it at their own pleasure, therefore these first comers naturally resisted Henderson's claims as an encroachment on a settler's rights. A conflict of claims arose that brought about many disputes and much confusion in land titles. The other settlements near Boonesborough had been made without the consent of The Transylvania Company, and upon land purchased by Henderson from the Cherokees. Henderson informed them that "such settlement should not entitle them to lands" from his Company. However, these free squatters objected to his proprietorship, and said the land was a part of the territory of Virginia, and that it had not been ceded to The Transylvania Company by that State. Henderson realized the force of these claims, and knowing that Virginia had not recognized his right to the land, and desiring a peaceful settlement of the disputes, he called a meeting of delegates from each of the settlements, to convene at Boonesborough, May 23, 1775.

Twelve delegates from Harrodsburg, Boiling Springs and Logan's Station and six from Boonesborough were elected. This, the first legislative assembly to meet west of the mountains, very appropriate to its wild surroundings, held its meeting

under the spreading branches of a giant elm. Henderson endeavored to impress the assembly with the importance of his claims, and to convince the settlers of The Transylvania Company's right to the land. A number of laws guaranteeing religious freedom and the general good of the pioneers were passed, but nothing was done to settle the disputed land claims. The assembly adjourned to meet again the following autumn; but the first and last legislative meeting of The Transylvania Company had been held. Proprietary government in the West and in all America was tottering to its fall. It had been imported from Europe and was too autocratic, by nature, to thrive upon the free soil of Kentucky.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Tell about the first permanent settlement of Kentucky. When, where and by whom was it made? How did the "Western fever" affect the settlement of the State? What is a Proprietary Government? Describe the Transylvania Company. What treaty was made at Sycamore Shoals? Describe the settlement made at Boonesborough. What proclamation was issued by Lord Dunmore? Describe the first legislative assembly ever held in Kentucky.

CHAPTER IX

FAILURE OF THE TRANSYLVANIA COMPANY

Spirit of Independence.—The pioneers who had faced many perils and hardships to found homes in the wilderness were quick to resent the threatening dangers to a free government in the West. The struggle of the Thirteen Colonies against the mother country for self-government had begun, and the bordermen of these colonies, who were now settling Kentucky, were ardent advocates of the independence of the colonies. It was natural, therefore, for them to insist that a representative government be set up in Kentucky.

The Transylvania Company was composed of worthy and intelligent men who knew that their dream of wealth would not be realized if opposed by the settlers of Kentucky and the government of Virginia. The attitude of the mother state to The Transylvania Company, and the opposition to a proprietary form of government, had already caused many to abandon Boonesborough and join the other settlements. By June, 1775, the number in Boonesborough had decreased to fifty, while the population of other stations was increasing rapidly.

Conflict of Authority.—Zeal for independence had spread throughout the colonies, and the Continental Congress was sitting at Philadelphia. Henderson and Company addressed a memorial to this body, request-

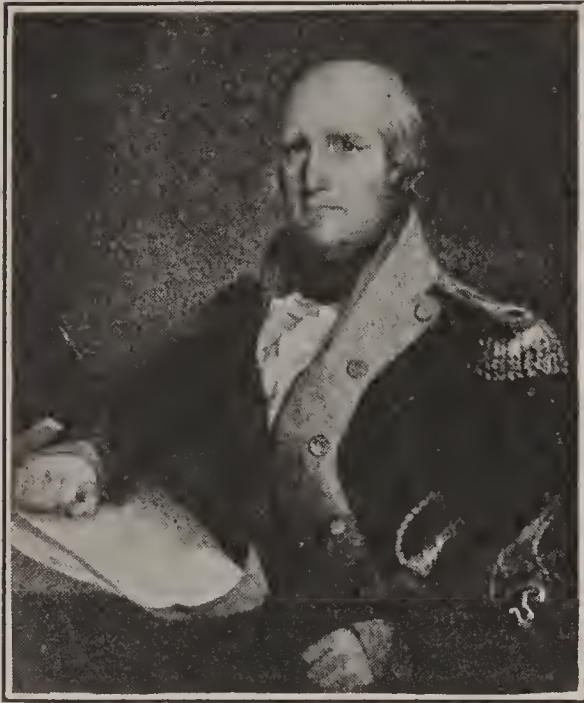
ing "that Transylvania be added to the number of the United Colonies," and expressing the earnest wish that the "Proprietors of Transylvania be considered by the Colonies as brothers engaged in the same great cause of liberty." This message was properly referred to the Virginia delegation because the territory in question was a part of Virginia's domain. Patrick Henry and Thomas Jefferson both opposed the action of Congress upon the memorial on the ground that Kentucky was a part of Virginia, and, therefore, not under the control of The Continental Congress. In the meantime, eighty-four settlers who had entered land in the office of The Transylvania Company had drawn up another petition and addressed it to the Convention of Virginia. This memorial asked that the petitioners be taken under the protection of the Colony of Virginia, that the titles of their lands might be made secure, and that they might be protected from the taxes imposed by The Transylvania Company.

The dangers to the settlers from Indians whom British agents had incited to war on the colonies in Kentucky, had also greatly increased. At this critical moment, George Rogers Clark, who was soon to play an active part in the history of the West, was sent as a delegate to Virginia from Kentucky. Clark knew that if Virginia would take steps to defend Kentucky against the Indians, it would serve as a notice to The Transylvania Company that the lands it had settled were still claimed by Virginia. Patrick Henry, who was then Governor of the State, listened with interest to Clark's appeal but referred him to the State Council. The Council agreed to loan Clark five hundred

pounds of powder if he would become personally responsible for its value, if the House of Burgesses refused to pay for it. Clark indignantly returned the order for the powder, saying, "A country which is not worth defending is not worth claiming." He threatened to return to Kentucky and help organize it into an independent state. This threat caused the Council to recall him; it then gave him an order for the powder, to be delivered at Fort Pitt, and from thence to be sent to Kentucky. When the Virginia Assembly met the following autumn, Clark, accompanied by Gabriel Jones, his fellow delegate, proceeded to Williamsburg and presented his petition to the Assembly. By his tact and winning personality, in spite of the opposition of The Transylvania Company, he won a victory for the Kentucky settlers. On December 7, 1776, the Virginia Assembly passed an act asserting the right of the State to all her western claims, known as Fincastle County, and divided this vast territory into three sections—Kentucky, Montgomery, and Washington Counties. This act sealed the fate of The Transylvania Company, and established the government of the Kentucky settlements under the rule of Virginia.

Powder Obtained.—Urged on by British agents, the fierce northern tribes threatened the complete destruction of the Kentucky settlements. The powder, which had been obtained from Virginia by Clark, was still at Pittsburg because the Ohio was closely guarded by numerous Indian war parties. Accompanied by seven fearless frontiersmen, Clark set out from Pittsburg with the precious cargo in a flatboat. After many ad-

ventures they landed the powder near the present site of Maysville, and hid it in the woods until they could get help to convey it to the settlements. They proceeded cautiously to McClelland's Station where Clark met Simon Kenton, who, as we shall see, played an important part in the early history of our State. A body



GEORGE ROGERS CLARK
"Washington of the West"



SIMON KENTON
A Great Indian Fighter

of men from McClelland's and other stations returned for the powder. They were waylaid by Indians and a number of them were killed; after receiving reinforcements, they succeeded in returning with the much-needed powder, which was distributed among the defenders of the forts.

Results of The Transylvania Company.—Henderson and Company, though influenced by greed for land and desire for power, had played an important part in the colonization of Kentucky. These men had opened the

Wilderness Road, spent large sums of money to induce settlers to occupy their claims, established a fortified station and helped clear away the forests and drive back the savages. They were brave and intelligent men, many of whom remained in Kentucky to help subdue the wilderness and establish our great State. Nor was Virginia unmindful of the service rendered by The Transylvania Company in the settlement of Kentucky; for, in 1778, her General Assembly passed an act granting to the Company 200,000 acres of fertile lands lying upon Green and Ohio Rivers, to compensate them for their losses. It also guaranteed the titles of all the lands entered by the settlers with The Transylvania Company. The reign of Proprietary government was over in America, and it was fitting that it should perish on the free soil of Kentucky, in the same year that saw the beginning of our struggle for national independence.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Why did the Kentucky settlers resist the authority of the Transylvania Company? What was the attitude of Virginia to the Transylvania Company? What steps did George Rogers Clark take at this time? Why did he go to Virginia? How did the granting of powder to the Kentucky colony affect the authority of the Transylvania Company? Notwithstanding the failure of Henderson and Company what good results followed the experiment?

CHAPTER X

PROGRESS IN THE SETTLEMENT OF KENTUCKY

At last Kentucky was settled, but the white man's hold upon the territory was not secure. There were many trials and dangers to be overcome before peace, plenty and safety could be established. The pioneers' struggle for supremacy over the savage, and years of toil in clearing away the forest and erecting their cabin homes, lay before them. In the fierce struggle many gave up their lives and were buried in unmarked graves throughout the State. Those who survived waged a continuous battle against the wilderness and its inhabitants that we might enjoy the present comforts and security of civic life.

Early Laws.—At the meeting of The Transylvania Legislative Assembly, already mentioned, a number of laws were passed for the peace and security of the people. Among these were acts to regulate the militia, to punish criminals, prevent swearing and Sabbath-breaking, and to preserve the game. These backwoodsmen, living in a "typical state of nature," found it necessary to organize for mutual help and defense. This necessity, as we shall see later, accounts for many manners and customs of pioneer days. Every able-bodied man was expected to bear arms, assist in erecting fortifications, and share in all the dangers and hardships of the community life. It was only through the banding together of the different settlements of

Kentucky for mutual defense against the savages that they survived.

A small but continuous stream of immigrants was now flowing into Kentucky, and attacks from the prowling savages were becoming more numerous. By the spring of 1777, the Indians had become the open allies of the British. Tempted by the rich presents of Colonel Henry Hamilton, who was stationed at Detroit, their attacks on the Kentuckians became more numerous and daring. It was difficult to get food from the eastern settlements, and game around the stations had become scarce. Boone, Kenton, and other hunters were compelled to creep through the forests for many miles by night, secure their game and slip back into the forts after dark. Prowling Indians hung about the stations and fell upon the settlers without warning, killing or capturing many of them.

Attack on Logan's Station.—One morning in May, 1777, St. Asaph's, better known as Logan's Station, was attacked by a band of Shawnees. The Indians had concealed themselves in a canebrake nearby and fired upon the guards when they came out, killing one man and wounding two, one so badly that he could not reach the fort. The wounded man, Burr Harrison, lay in sight of his wife who was inside the fort. In a frenzy of grief, she besought the guards to rescue him before he was tomahawked by the Indians. Now there were only twelve men in the fort, and it seemed unwise to risk the loss of others for the sake of one who was probably fatally wounded. But Benjamin Logan, the big, brave-hearted Captain in command, called for volunteers to rescue Harrison. Only one man, John

Martin, came forward. Logan and Martin threw open a gate of the fort and bounded toward the wounded man. A hot rifle fire from the savages met them, and Martin turned back; but Logan dashed on alone, seized Harrison and bore him upon his shoulders into the fort amidst a hail of bullets. Such heroic actions tell more eloquently than words of the strong and yet sympathetic spirit of the pioneer. The Indians continued the siege, ammunition in the fort was getting short, and the fort and its heroic defenders seemed doomed. Knowing that other nearby stations had neither powder nor bullets to spare, the daring Logan again came to the rescue. Mounting his best horse, and accompanied by two companions, he slipped through the Indian lines and struck out for the distant settlements on the Holston. The Wilderness Road being watched by the savages, Logan was compelled to travel through the pathless forest, ford streams and scale the cliff-broken mountain spurs, sleeping wherever night overtook him. Behind him lay the besieged fort, its brave defenders and the beloved of his own household; before him the precious means for their relief, if only he were not too late. The hero won! In ten days Logan returned with the needed stores and a relief party, and the station was saved.¹

Boonesborough Attacked.—During this year of grim terrors to the settlers, Simon Kenton made his headquarters at Boonesborough, and spent most of his time spying upon the Indian camps and war parties, and

¹ The Holston settlements were in the extreme northwestern part of North Carolina, a distance of about two hundred miles from Logan's Station.

warning the settlers of any approaching attack. Often, disguised as an Indian, he slipped through the forest like a spirit, haunting Indian trails or hovering about their villages beyond the Ohio. Once while Kenton was detained in Boonesborough, it was attacked by the red-skins without warning. There were only twenty-two riflemen in the fort. Most of the savages lay concealed, while a small decoy party fired on the fort and fled. Kenton, Boone, Todd and a majority of the garrison rushed out in pursuit of the savages. Suddenly they found themselves cut off from the fort by a large band of Indians. Boone ordered his men to turn and dash for the fort. A hand-to-hand struggle followed. Boone, Isaac Hite, John Todd, Michael Stoner and other men prominent in Transylvania history were wounded. Boone had his leg broken by a bullet, and a big warrior was in the act of lifting his tomahawk to strike him, when Kenton, who had already killed two Indians, seeing Boone's great peril, shot the Indian dead. Then raising Boone to his shoulders he carried him swiftly to the fort and returned to plunge again into the fight. After the gate was closed the Indians kept up the siege for three days before they retired.¹

¹ Simon Kenton was one of the most celebrated of the early pioneers. He was born in Virginia, April 13, 1755. His father was an Irishman and his mother of Scotch descent. His parents being poor, his education was neglected. In an unfortunate fight with a rival over a love affair his victim was left unconscious. Thinking he had slain his former friend, conscience stricken, he fled to the wilds of Kentucky. He changed his name to "Simon Butler," which name he bore for eleven years, when, to his great joy, he learned that his rival still lived. Kenton was a big, kind-hearted man, strong in mind and body. His services in the settlement of Kentucky were hardly second to those of Daniel Boone. "Collins' History of Kentucky," Vol. II, p. 442.

“Onward like a mighty army
Led by hopes of courage bred,
Move the deer-skin coated settlers
O'er the trails with life blood red.
See the forests fall before them—
Cabins rise beside the streams—
Fields of maize and waving barley
In the autumn sunlight gleam,
Fast before their deadly rifles
Flees the painted savage on
And the ox-drawn car of Progress
Seeks the way which they have gone.”

—C. E. Blevins, “The Kentucky Pioneers.”

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

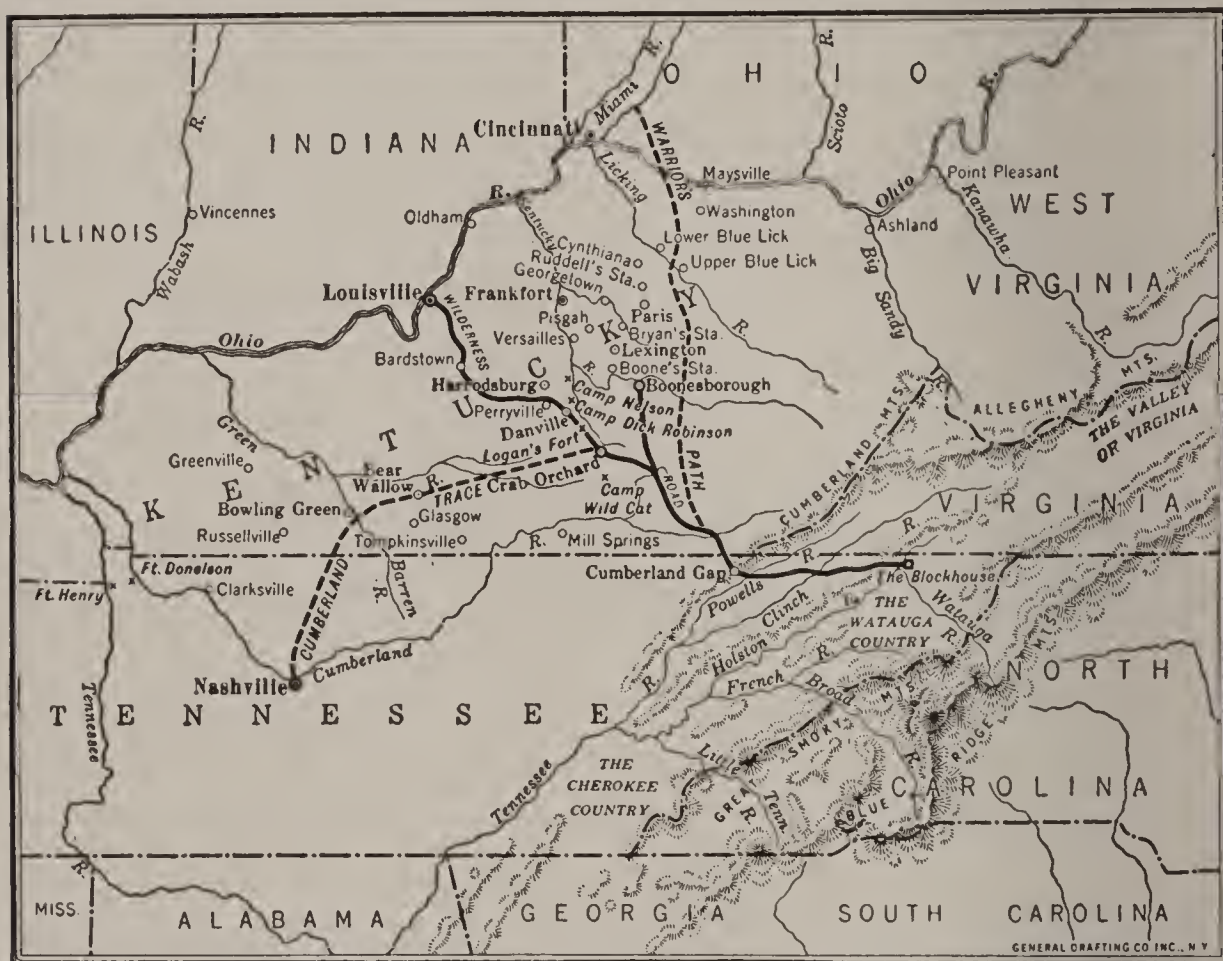
What obstacles still stood in the way of Kentucky settlers? What were some of the early laws passed by the Transylvania Assembly? Describe the Indian attack on Logan's Station. Describe the attack on Boonesborough. Sketch the life of Simon Kenton.

CHAPTER XI

EARLY ROADS

Two Main Roads.—Kentucky was separated, for the most part, from Virginia by an impassable mountain barrier. To reach it, the pioneers were compelled to pass north around the spurs of the Allegheny Mountains and float down the Ohio River, or travel overland through Cumberland Gap, at the southeastern extremity of the State. Those living in Pennsylvania and northern Virginia usually embarked on the Ohio at Fort Pitt or Wheeling. They built heavy flat-bottomed boats in which to carry their domestic animals and fowls, provisions and tools, and other articles necessary in settling a new country. The fierce savage tribes living north of the Ohio River made this waterway very dangerous to navigation. The immigrants, however, were generally composed of well-armed parties that were able to drive off the Indians. The road that led through Cumberland Gap was a longer but safer route for most of the settlers, consequently, it became the more popular way, especially for the smaller groups. Gradually, as the savages were driven back, the Ohio became a safer and more popular route to Kentucky. Besides being shorter, it was not so toilsome as the long wilderness way. The heavy barges furnished easy transportation of supplies needed by the rapidly increasing population of the State. Before the treaty which was made with the Indians at Syca-

more Shoals, no road had been opened to Kentucky, though Boone and other explorers and hunters had found their way over Cumberland Gap through a tangle of brush and canebrake into the State. As related in a previous chapter, The Transylvania Com-



MAP OF PIONEER ROADS

pany, realizing the need of a road to their new possessions, employed Daniel Boone to blaze a trail across the mountains to Kentucky.¹ These pathfinders

¹From a fort called "The Blockhouse," located on the Watauga River in North Carolina, to Boonesborough, The Wilderness Road passed over about two hundred miles of rugged forest-covered hills and mountains. The "trail," as marked by Boone, led from the Watauga River in East Tennessee to Moccasin Gap near Gate City, and extended along the old trail to Powell's Valley, and passed down

pushed their way westward through canebrakes, dead brush, and undergrowth, chopping and clearing a way for the stream of immigrants which was soon to follow. In the open timber, their progress was more rapid. As they wound through the woods they blazed the trees along the way with their axes and tomahawks to leave a trace for others to follow. In a fortnight they reached the Kentucky River and came out on the open stretches of land that is now the Blue Grass Section of the State. Mr. Walker, a member of the party, says in his diary, "So rich a soil we had never seen before, covered with clover in full bloom, while the woods abounded in wild game. It appeared that nature, in her profusion, had spread a feast for all that lived, both for the animal and rational world." The real invasion of Kentucky began with the opening of The Wilderness Road, for in all ages, roads have been the highways of civilization. It opened the way for the forward movement of the eager pioneers, and each group of them that passed that way widened, straightened, and improved the road as time went on.

Near Rockcastle River, the road branched, the main line following the "Warrior's Path" on to Boonesborough; while the western branch led by Crab Orchard, Danville, and on to Louisville. Later, a trail, known as the "Cumberland Trace," was opened from

this to Cumberland Gap. Thence Boone followed the "Warrior's Path" across a ford of the Cumberland just below Pineville Gap, thence down the Cumberland to Flat Lick. Here he took the old Buffalo Trail which led to Hazel Patch, near Rockcastle River, thence up around Stone Creek to Boone's Gap, two miles southeast of Berea, and on to Otter Creek and Kentucky River, where he built Boonesborough. See map, p. 60.

Crab Orchard, in Lincoln County, and ran in a southwestern direction on to Nashville. This "trace" connected with The Wilderness Road, and passed near Greensburg, on south of Bowling Green, thence through Simpson County, into Tennessee. It too, became a path much traveled by the early settlers of southern Kentucky, and Nashville, Tennessee. These roads were mere bridle-paths that wandered with the rivers and valleys, and crossed the streams at fords; yet, how important they were in leading the settler through the uncharted wilderness!

The Wilderness Road ran through the high-swung gateway of Cumberland Gap, and soon became a popular passway between the rugged foothills of the East and the dismal forests and pleasant valleys and plains of the West. Through this gap, which is 1,600 feet above the sea level, passed the first white men who led the way into the valleys of Kentucky and Tennessee. By its grim crags passed the "Long Hunters," and the first explorers and settlers. Over the path trod by these bands of fearless women and men, now flow, back and forth, hosts of civilized people, and the wealth of the East and West. As Mr. James Lane Allen says, it has witnessed "the wild rush and whoop of retreating and pursuing tribes; the slow steps of watchful pioneers; the wail of dying children and the songs of homeless women; the muffled tread of routed and broken armies—all the sounds of surprise and delight, victory and defeat, hunger and pain, and weariness and despair that the human heart can utter."

The Influence of the Wilderness Road.—The Wilderness Road became the key to a vast territory, and had



CUMBERLAND RIVER AND THE WILDERNESS ROAD.

a far-reaching influence in bringing the wild-land empire of the entire West into our present Union of

States. With a grim purpose, and with their faces forever set westward, bands of heroic women and men passed through this mountain gap and over this highway into the heart of a new country. Two human tides, even in these early years, had begun to flow back and forth over The Wilderness Road. The outgoing settler would often meet the faint-hearted and unfit fleeing from the dangers of Indian attacks, and the hardships of pioneer life. Only the stout-hearted could take root and flourish amid so many perils. Hundreds, who dreamed of wealth and peaceful homes in Kentucky, saw their hopes vanish in the smoke of Indian guns. A grim sort of fate seemed to be culling the fit from the unfit and planting the former in the wilderness for a wise purpose. The future welfare of our nation was hanging upon the westward march of the pioneer, and The Wilderness Road was not opened a day too soon. The pioneer rushed upon the wilderness in his mad greed for land. He did not dream that he was about to become the guard at the back door of the colonies of the East, while the War of Independence was being fought; nor did he dream that, through his efforts, the great Northwest would be peopled by the white man, and held for the needs of our great Government that was about to be established.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What natural barriers separated Kentucky from Virginia? How did the settlers reach Kentucky? Describe the Wilderness Road. Trace it on the map, page 60. What part did it play in the settlement of the West? Locate Cumberland Gap. What class of settlers survived in the wilderness?

CHAPTER XII

PERILOUS DAYS

IN 1775, Daniel Boone, Hugh McGary, Richard Hogan, Thomas Denton, John McClelland, and others brought their families into Kentucky. With the coming of the families true home-life began; and the inspiring presence of women and children tightened the hold of the pioneers upon the wilderness, and made them defenders of real homes and firesides. The heroic deeds and the noble sacrifices of the pioneer women who stood side by side with the men have never been surpassed in history or fiction. Their example should inspire every Kentucky girl and boy with a zeal to be worthy descendants of such a race of heroines.

A Spartan Band.—While the patriots of the Revolution were battling against British hosts for national liberty, there was a no less heroic band of men in Kentucky hurling back the savage attacks on the new settlements. Daniel Boone, Richard Callaway, John Floyd, John Todd, Benjamin Logan, and many other brave and tireless leaders, with stout hearts and deadly rifles, stood at the forest passes or behind the rustic fortresses fighting a cunning and merciless foe that crept through the dark forests like a foul breath to fall upon the settlers like a scourge. The numerous attacks during these early years were serious and distressing and were unfavorable to the growth of the

settlements, but they failed to loosen the pioneers' grip on the wilderness.

Perils and Romance.—But sometimes romance and even comedy were mingled with the many tragedies that tried the pioneers' souls. One warm Sunday afternoon in July, 1776, three girls, Betsey and Fanny Callaway, daughters of Colonel Callaway, and Jemima



Copyrighted, Keystone.

INDIANS CAPTURE THREE GIRLS

Boone, daughter of Colonel Daniel Boone, were out boating on the Kentucky River near Boonesborough, when five Indians rushed from cover and dragged the canoe from shallow water to the shore and captured the girls. Betsey Callaway was only sixteen years old, and the other two only fourteen, but in spite of their frantic efforts to escape, they were overpowered and dragged away into captivity. The fathers of the girls

were absent from home at the time but soon returned. Two rescuing parties were organized at once, one to go on foot, and the other mounted. Among those who accompanied Boone's party on foot were three young lovers of the girls, Samuel Henderson, Captain John Holder, and Flanders Callaway. The party followed the trail of the Indians until dark, and took it up again at dawn. In spite of the Indians' threats to tomahawk her, Betsey Callaway broke twigs, left prints of her shoe heels, and bits of her dress along the way as signs for the rescuing party to follow. Fearing the girls would grow weary and be put to death before being rescued, the pursuing party took fresh courage at every sign of life the girls had left. Early in the morning of the third day, Boone and his party came upon the Indians in camp. To prevent their tomahawking the prisoners, four of the men fired on the Indians, then all rushed upon the camp. Those of the Indians who were not killed or wounded, fled, and only one lived to reach home. A glad father and three happy lovers greeted the weary but now happy girls. It is easy to believe that the three pairs of lovers, Samuel Henderson and Betsey Callaway, Captain Holder and Fanny Callaway, and Flanders Callaway and Jemima Boone were the happiest members of the party that returned to Boonesborough. The first wedding in Kentucky took place three weeks later when Squire Boone united Betsey Callaway and Samuel Henderson in marriage. Later still, each of the other Romeos claimed his Juliet at the altar of marriage.

Boone and the Salt Makers Captured.—In February, 1778, Boone and a party of thirty men were encamped

at Blue Licks on the Licking River for the purpose of making salt for the settlers. While out hunting Boone was captured by a band of a hundred or more Indians, who, he learned, were on their way to attack Boonesborough. Knowing the fort could not hold out in its weakened condition against so large a body, he agreed to lead his captors to his camp on a promise that they would spare the lives of his men. Boone was confident that the Indians would return at once to Detroit to claim the reward for their prisoners from the British, and he would thus prevent an attack on Boonesborough. As he approached the camp he gave notice to his men of the situation and advised them not to resist. Twenty-seven men surrendered, three having gone to Boonesborough to carry salt. The Indians kept their promise of "generous usage" which they had made to Boone, and conducted the prisoners to Chillicothe, and later to Detroit to receive their reward. Governor Hamilton treated the prisoners, whom the Indians released, kindly, and offered a large reward for Boone. But the Indians had become attached to him, and their chief resolved to adopt him as his son. Accordingly they returned with Boone to Chillicothe where he was adopted according to their customs.¹ Boone submitted to the wishes of the Indians with apparent pleasure in order to win their

¹ Adoption into a tribe was considered a great compliment by Indians, though it was painful and humiliating to the white man. The hair was plucked out except a "scalp lock" which was left long, and it was adorned with trinkets and feathers. The victim was then thoroughly washed by the women to "take out all his white blood." Then he was addressed by the chief to impress him with the great honor that had been shown him. After this, he was painted and decorated in Indian fashion, then feasting and smoking in his honor followed.

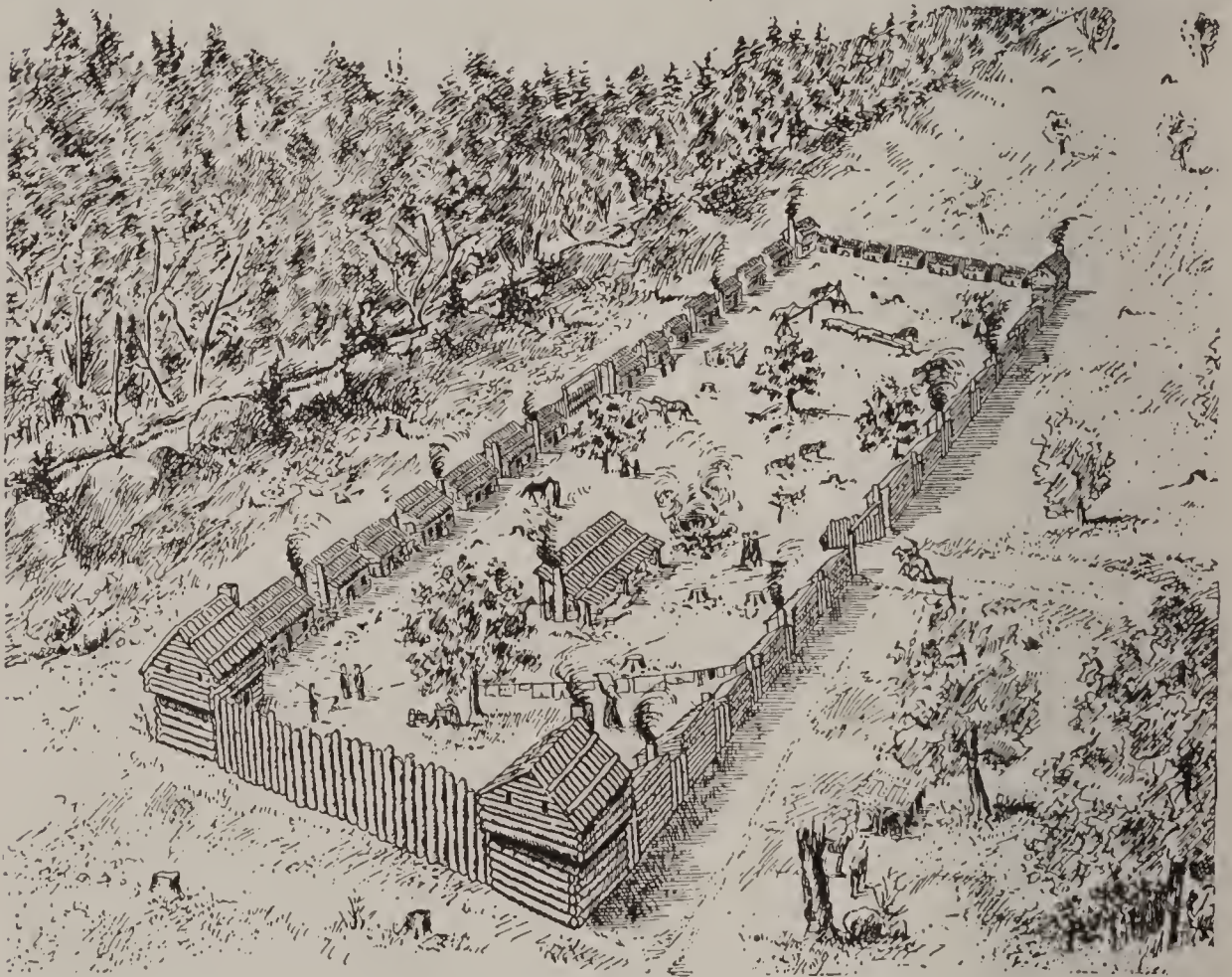
confidence. He says, "I was exceedingly familiar and friendly with them, always appearing as cheerful and satisfied as possible."

Boone's Escape.—All the while, Boone was planning to escape and was secretly saving powder and bullets for the day of his departure. In June, over four months after his capture, about four hundred and fifty warriors painted and armed, gathered for an expedition against Boonesborough. The time for Boone to escape had now arrived. Before sunrise, June 15, he slipped quietly away, and in four days reached Boonesborough, a distance of one hundred and sixty miles, and warned the settlers. He had risked his life in making his escape and had eaten but one meal during the long journey.¹ Boone's escape caused the Indians to delay their attack, but the settlers set about strengthening their fortifications immediately upon his arrival.

Siege of Boonesborough.—On August 8, 1778, over four hundred savages, painted in the hideous colors, and wearing the horrid apparel of savage warfare, and bearing the flag of His Britannic Majesty, appeared before Boonesborough. They were led by the French Canadian, Captain Duquesne (De Quindre), and the great chief, Blackfish, who demanded the surrender of

¹ Upon his return, Boone was mistrusted by some of the pioneers because he had surrendered his men to the Indians. Stephen Hancock, one of the prisoners, had escaped and returned to Boonesborough. He reported that Boone was friendly to the British and offered his services to them against the Americans. Boone was tried for treason but acquitted on the plea that he had made friendly promises in order to escape, and that he had returned to aid them in the defense of Boonesborough. Certain it is, that while he was wily, and possibly deceitful to the enemy, he was faithful to his friends and loyal to his country.

Boonesborough in the name of King George III. Here again the wily Boone came forward and asked for time to consider the terms of surrender offered by the enemy. Strange to say, two days were granted.



BOONESBOROUGH.

The inward sloping roofs of the cabins gave greater protection to the settlers in time of a siege

These were spent in strengthening the fort, bringing in water, and gathering in the cattle and horses. At the end of this time Boone tauntingly thanked the enemy for giving him a chance to prepare for the attack, and assured them they were now ready to defend the fort as long as a man remained. There were less than fifty riflemen in the fort, but in order to make

their forces appear larger, Colonel Richard Callaway caused the women to dress in male attire, and to appear upon the walls of the fort with the men. Concealing their disappointment and anger at Boone's refusal to surrender the fort, the Indians asked that about nine men be sent out to make a friendly treaty with them, after which they promised they would depart. The defenders, though suspecting treachery, agreed to this and sent out Boone, Callaway, and others to make treaty, but Callaway instructed the guards in the fort to be ready with their guns to fire on the enemy if they attempted violence. After agreeing to a treaty, the Indians asked that two of their warriors be permitted to shake hands with each of the white men to prove their friendship and sincerity. Thereupon two Indians attempted to seize the hands of each white man, but the watchful pioneers, suspecting treachery, broke away and escaped into the fort while the defenders fired on the deceitful foe from behind the stockade. The siege now began in earnest and lasted for nine days. Many attempts were made to burn the fort but recent rains had soaked the timbers and the fires were easily put out. Duquesne attempted to undermine the fort by digging a tunnel from the river bank into the stockade, but this also was discovered and prevented. Foiled in all their attempts, the Indians withdrew after having lost several killed and wounded, and Boonesborough was never again attacked. Only two of the settlers had been killed and four wounded; the wily savages had been defeated, but the siege had tested the courage of the stoutest hearts.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Who first brought their families to Kentucky? Name the principal pioneer heroes. Tell the story of the capture of the three girls. Tell the story of the capture of Boone and the salt makers. Describe Boone's adoption and escape. Describe the siege of Boonesborough.

CHAPTER XIII

CLARK PLANS AN EXPEDITION AGAINST
THE BRITISH AND INDIANS

A Bold Plan.—George Rogers Clark remained in Kentucky most of the year of 1777, taking part in the defense of the settlements. But he was a far-sighted man of energy and action. All the while he was revolving in his mind a scheme for carrying the war into the Indian country north of the Ohio. Since the breaking out of the Revolution, larger Indian war-parties, often led by white men in the employment of the British, had attacked the Kentucky settlements. Many small “expeditions” that had served but little purpose except to provoke the Indian to further cruelties, had been made into the red man's land. With the mental sweep of a military genius, Clark saw that a successful campaign against the Illinois country would dishearten the Indians, and break the power of the British in the West. It was a bold scheme, for the country beyond the Ohio was the seat of powerful and warlike nations that were well-armed by British agents, and often led by skillful white officers.

Clark Sends Spies.—Clark now sent two shrewd young hunters as spies to the neighborhood of Vincennes, but did not breathe a word to them or any one else of his object. The spies brought back word that while some of the young men were in the service of the English, most of the French people were lukewarm in their allegiance to the British flag, and that many of them were friendly to the American cause.¹ The further report of the spies confirmed Clark's suspicions that many of the attacks made upon the Kentucky settlements had been encouraged by the British. He believed that, if given an opportunity, these Frenchmen would aid the Americans in a campaign against the British and Indians in the Illinois country.²

Clark Goes to Virginia.—Convinced that the safety of the Kentucky settlement could be secured only by a successful campaign against the British and Indians in the Northwest, Clark resolved to set out at once for Virginia to secure aid for his enterprise. He left Harrodsburg in October, 1777, over The Wilderness Road, in company with a large party of men, women and children, who, disheartened by Indian attacks, were returning to the Eastern settlements. Upon his arrival at Williamsburg, Virginia, he laid his plans before Governor Patrick Henry and asked for men, money, and arms to carry out his scheme. Governor

¹ The student should remember that the French had established a number of trading posts and settlements in this territory, which came under the dominion of the British at the close of the French and Indian War. While these French people, also called Creoles, were subjects of the British Crown, they bore no love for their conquerors.

² It must be remembered that the "Illinois Country" included what are now the great states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin.

Henry called into council Thomas Jefferson, George Mason and George Wythe, prominent statesmen, who, after listening to Clark's plans, recommended that the Virginia Council take steps, "with as little delay and as much secrecy as possible" to carry them out. In order that information of the intended expedition might not reach the British, great secrecy was necessary. Two sets of instructions were given to Clark; one private, which authorized him to make the campaign, and the other a public order to raise and equip an army for the campaign against the Illinois towns.

A Small Army Is Assembled.—Clark at once set about enlisting and equipping an army, which he found a very difficult task. After four months of earnest toil he succeeded in getting together and equipping about one hundred and fifty men, who assembled at Redstone, now Brownsville, Pennsylvania, on the Monongahela River. They left Redstone in May, 1778, passed down the Ohio, stopping at Fort Pitt and Wheeling, to get army supplies. The heroic little band was accompanied by a number of adventurers and settlers with their families. Clark landed at the mouth of the Kentucky River, along which many of the settlers proceeded to the interior of the State. He reached the Falls on May 27, where the rest of the immigrants that were with him founded a settlement on an island, and raised a crop of corn, from which the island was called Corn Island.

Louisville Settled.—These settlers moved to the mainland in the autumn at the present site of Louisville. Clark, called "The Hannibal of the West," may

rightly be considered the founder of the present metropolis of Kentucky. The town, however, had been laid off by Captain Thomas Bullitt in 1773. In 1780, this settlement was named Louisville in honor of the French king, who had recently become our ally. At the Falls, Clark received the pleasing news of America's alliance with France, which he believed would help to win the French inhabitants of the Illinois posts to his cause.¹ A number of volunteers had joined Clark's party on the way, and about twelve men from the Holston country came over The Wilderness Road to meet him at the Falls. Here his expedition was joined by Simon Kenton and a few other Kentucky volunteers. The principal officers in command under Clark were Captains William Lynn, Joseph Montgomery,

¹The messenger who probably brought the news of the alliance to Clark was Captain William Lynn. At least, it is known that he overtook and joined Clark's expedition before it left the Falls for Kaskaskia. Lynn was appointed by Governor Henry in 1776 to secure a cargo of powder in New Orleans for the defense of the frontier. In spite of the watchfulness of British agents, Lynn obtained ten thousand pounds and with a crew of brave men succeeded in boating the powder up the Mississippi and Ohio to Wheeling and other frontier posts. The party was in constant danger of surprise by Indians, while hunger and a treacherous river added to their peril. They were sometimes compelled to land and hunt for game to prevent starvation. The heroic band poled, towed and rowed their precious cargo against a mighty current for eighteen hundred miles. They were the first white men to make the trip with a cargo, and it is easy to believe their heroic deed saved the frontier posts and greatly aided in the War of Independence. Captain Lynn was second in command in the Clark expedition and took an active part in many important affairs with the British and Indians. After the capture of Kaskaskia, Clark sent him back to the Falls to remove the stores from Corn Island to the shore, and to erect cabins and a stockade where Louisville now stands. In 1781 he was shot from ambush by Indians. Lynn's name stands on the roll of heroes who served their country well in time of need. (See "Captain William Lynn," by George W. Beattie, Filson Club MSS.)

Leonard Helm, Joseph Bowman and William Harrod. Before leaving the Falls, he built a stockade fort for the protection of the settlers and as a place for storing his reserve supplies. He now set about preparations for his heroic adventure, and for the first time made known to his little army the object of his expedition. The plan seemed so hazardous that some of the Holston volunteers deserted.

A Perilous Expedition.—After leaving a small garrison at the fort on Corn Island, Clark “shot the rapids” June 24, 1778, and proceeded down the Ohio to an island just below the mouth of the Tennessee River, where he landed and prepared for the march overland to Kaskaskia. Never had so small a band of heroes undertaken such a perilous enterprise, and one, as we shall see, which had such important results. Before beginning their march the little party was joined by six American hunters who had recently been in the French settlements. They furnished Clark with some important information, and agreed to act as guides. Writing of the expedition Clark says, “I knew my case was desperate, but the more I reflected on my weakness the more I was pleased with the enterprise.” He was a young man of great physical strength and an iron will, therefore, he felt no weakness personally, but the extent of the undertaking for an army of less than two hundred men made the situation “desperate.”

Speaking of the expedition, Bancroft says, “For the valor of the actors, their fidelity to one another, the seeming feebleness of their means and the great results of their hardihood, they are forever memo-

rable in the history of the world." How well Clark and his heroic little band achieved their purpose will be related in the next chapter.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What was Clark's plan of defense? Why did he go to Virginia? Did Patrick Henry favor Clark's plans? What difficulties did Clark encounter in raising his little army? With how many men did he leave the Falls for his perilous expedition? Why was Clark's expedition a very dangerous and yet important one? What does Bancroft say of the expedition?

CHAPTER XIV

CLARK'S EXPEDITION

The Capture of Kaskaskia.—Instead of following the much-traveled waterway, Clark decided to march overland to Kaskaskia, one hundred and twenty miles, over swampy and difficult roads, in order to take the enemy by surprise. Piloted by his guides, he pushed rapidly and silently forward and on the fourth of July reached the Kaskaskia River, within three miles of the town. Here the little army remained concealed in the woods until after dark. From a family living near the town he learned that the occupants were off their guard. Clark divided his forces in two parts; one he spread out to surround the town that none might escape, and the other he personally led up to the walls of the fortress. The Americans swarmed through the gates and were in possession of the town

and fortress before the enemy was aware of their presence. In the meantime, Clark's men had entered the fort and seized Rocheblave, the Commandant, and his officers. Thus Kaskaskia fell into the hands of the Americans without the firing of a shot. Runners were sent through the town ordering all people to remain indoors on pain of death. The inhabitants were terror-stricken by the sudden and mysterious appearance of the backwoodsmen, whom the British had taught them to believe were more cruel and blood-thirsty than savages.

The next morning the chief men of the town waited upon Clark, and with the greatest fear and humility, begged him to spare them and their families. Now Clark was not only a brave warrior but a man of great tact. He knew that his little band could not hold out long in the midst of so numerous an enemy. He wished to convert the inhabitants to the American cause, and explained to them that they had come not to enslave them but to set up a free government for all who chose to be loyal to the Americans. He assured their priest, Pierre Gibault, that he and his people should have perfect religious freedom, and that it was the business of the Americans to defend all churches from insult. In brief, by stern dealings with any who resisted, and kind treatment of all who were friendly, he won the French and many of the Indians to the American cause.

Surrender of Cahokia and Vincennes.—Father Gibault became a warm friend of the Americans, and through him the French were also won over. The people of Cahokia, learning of what had transpired at Kas-

kaskia, and receiving news of the alliance between France and America, surrendered to a small detachment of Americans and French volunteers. Through the influence of the priest and some of the leading citizens of Kaskaskia, Vincennes, in a similar manner, pulled down the British colors and ran up the American flag instead. With the tact and address of a treaty-maker that had never been surpassed, Clark made allies of the fierce Indian tribes that surrounded him. For some time the Indians were friendly and the French remained loyal, but Clark foresaw many threatening dangers.

The time of enlistment of his soldiers had expired and many of them insisted upon returning home. He was hundreds of miles from any American posts and surrounded by powerful and treacherous Indian tribes that were but recently allies of the British. Realizing his danger, Clark organized, drilled, and equipped a number of French volunteers for his army.

The Fall and Recapture of Vincennes.—Colonel Henry Hamilton, whom the Kentuckians called the “Hair Buyer,”¹ was stationed at Detroit with a strong body of British regulars, besides having numerous Indian allies. As soon as he learned of the capture of Kaskaskia and Vincennes, he organized an expedition against Clark to retake these towns. He left Detroit, October 7, and appeared before Vincennes in December, with a force of five hundred men. Cap-

¹ The pioneers called Hamilton the “Hair Buyer” because they said he set a price upon American scalps taken by the Indians. It is at least certain that the British encouraged Indian depredations against the Americans.

tain Leonard Helm, who had command of the fort, being deserted by his fickle French garrison, was compelled to surrender. Winter had set in and Hamilton feared to attempt an expedition against Kaskaskia until spring. Learning of this, Clark at once began preparations to retake Vincennes. He knew that his situation was desperate, and that he must "quit the country or attack Mr. Hamilton." He dispatched Captain Rogers with forty-six men on board the boat, *Willing*, up the Wabash to the mouth of White River, there to await orders. With an army of only one hundred and seventy men, Clark left Kaskaskia February 5, 1779, and began a terrible march of one hundred and seventy miles across the "drowned lands" of the Illinois wilderness. History fails to reveal a more hazardous undertaking, more heroically accomplished. In many places the water was breast high. They waded across swamps and marshes and forded or swam the icy streams, and at night camped under frozen skies. Their provisions gave out, and they were in danger of starvation. Clark led the way, cheering and rallying his brave men by the example of his own cheerful and heroic spirit. He says, "A drummer boy, the pet of the regiment, was placed on the shoulders of a tall man and ordered to beat for his life," to cheer the drooping spirits of the men. When within two miles of the town, knowing the friendly feelings of the inhabitants, Clark resolved to play a bold game. He sent a dispatch to them telling them he would immediately attack the fort, and that all true friends should remain peaceably in their homes, and all enemies of the Americans should

“join the hair-buyer General and fight like men.” The inhabitants believed the town was about to be attacked by a large army. The surprise was so complete and the message so daring, that none were disposed to resist. Nor did anyone dare to inform Colonel Hamilton of the approach of his enemy; as a result, the town was peaceably occupied. A short siege of the fort followed, but on the 24th of February, 1779, Hamilton surrendered, and the garrison became prisoners of war. The Americans had only one wounded, and the British, eight killed and wounded. Two days later the *Willing* arrived, having been delayed by the swift currents of the Wabash, but too late to take part in the capture of the town.

Results of the Campaign.—Thus ended one of the most masterly campaigns in the history of warfare. True, but few were engaged on either side, but for far-reaching results it has never been surpassed. It gave to the United States that vast territory out of which were formed the great states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin. Had not the Americans captured and held this territory during the Revolution, the treaty of 1783 would probably have fixed the Ohio River as our northern boundary instead of the present Canadian line.¹

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

How did Clark's little army reach Kaskaskia? Describe the capture of the town. How did Clark win the friendship of Father Gibault

¹ For an interesting account of Clark's expedition read Chapter XI, “Daniel Boone and the Wilderness Road,” by Addington Bruce.

and the French people? What other towns were captured? Tell the story of the fall and recapture of Vincennes. Why was Hamilton called the "Hair Buyer"? What great results came from this campaign?

CHAPTER XV

HARDSHIPS AND DANGERS OF EARLY YEARS

WE must now leave the peerless Clark in the Northwest and turn to other important events that had been transpiring in Kentucky.

In April, 1775, a party of hunters were camping on Elkhorn Creek, in what is now Fayette County, when they heard of the battle that opened the War of Independence, and in honor of the event they named the place Lexington. Thus, in the center of the beautiful Blue Grass Region of Kentucky was erected, by the naming of Lexington, the first monument in honor of the first who died in the American Revolution.¹ The place was a favorite camping ground until April, 1779, when Colonel Robert Patterson, James Morrison, the McConnells, Lindseys, and others began a permanent settlement there. Many of the early settlers of Lexington became noted among the daring and enterprising pioneers of the State. The fort was

¹ "Stepped forth young Robert Patterson, and in voice emotion-hoarse:
'Let us give this spot, my comrades,' cried he, 'whereon we stand,
The glorious name of *Lexington*, which shall be throughout the land
For all time to come a monument that the sons of men can see,
And an altar dedicated to a people brave and free.' "

larger but similar in construction to other pioneer fortresses, and was located near a large spring. This settlement, fortunately, escaped any serious Indian attacks, and grew to be the center of the far-famed Blue Grass Region of Kentucky.

Bryan's and Ruddle's Stations.—The same year, Bryan's Station, located about five miles northeast of Lexington, was settled by four brothers, one of whom, William Bryan, had married a sister of Daniel Boone. The station was one of the frontier posts of the settlements and became the object of many Indian attacks. Ruddle's Station, located on South Licking River, had been settled by John Hinkson in 1775. After being deserted for nearly two years, it was re-occupied by Isaac Ruddle and a party of settlers. They strengthened the fort, built cabins, and later were joined by James Ruddle and others.

George Rogers Clark returned to Kentucky in the spring of 1779, and found great changes had taken place. His victories in the Illinois Territory had encouraged many more people to seek homes in the great West; but Clark knew that British and Indian attacks would not cease until the British posts at Sandusky and Detroit were destroyed, or a general peace was obtained by a decisive victory. A number of forts and stations had sprung up in spite of the large and numerous bands of Indian marauders that still harassed the Kentucky settlements.

The "Hard Winter."—In the midst of Indian terrors and the labor and hardships of the settlers in erecting their new homes in the wilderness, came the "Hard Winter" of 1779, that blocked the rivers with

ice for three months. Provisions became so scarce that starvation threatened the people. Many of the domestic animals died of cold and hunger, and the wild animals became scarce and so lean they were unfit for food. Many of the cabins were incomplete; even the best were open and cold so that suffering became very great; but the suffering of companies of immigrants who were overtaken by snow storms while on their way to Kentucky were even greater. In the midst of these woes the women spun and wove, the men improved their cabins, and the land commissioners continued to adjust claims and to issue titles to land without thought of abandoning their homes in the new country.

Capture of Ruddle's and Martin's Stations.—In the summer of 1780, a force of over six hundred Indians and Canadians, led by Colonel Byrd, a British officer, and accompanied by six pieces of artillery, appeared before Ruddle's Station and demanded its surrender. Captain Ruddle, knowing it would be impossible to hold out against so large and well-armed a foe, agreed to surrender on the promise of Colonel Byrd that the Americans would become the prisoners of the British, and be protected from the Indians. When the gates were opened, however, the Indians rushed in, seized the prisoners, and plundered the fort. Husbands, wives, and children were separated in a most pitiless way and scattered among the Indian tribes—some were murdered and a few escaped to return to Kentucky. Captain Ruddle protested against this cruelty, but the British officer declared he could not prevent so numerous a band of savages from violating the treaty.

The Indians were eager to make an immediate attack on Martin's Station, located five miles from Ruddle's Station, but Colonel Byrd refused to lead them unless their chiefs agreed that all prisoners should belong to the British, and that the Indians should have only the plunder. Upon this agreement, they marched against Martin's Station, which also yielded without resistance. The Indians were eager for further conquests but Colonel Byrd insisted upon the necessity of their returning to their camps beyond the Ohio, thus unwittingly saving other settlements from destruction.¹

Pioneer Schools.—Notwithstanding many disasters, the dauntless settlers clung to the land they had settled. The spring of 1780 brought still other immigrants from the eastern colonies, among whom were many useful and educated men. In spite of hardships and constant perils from Indians, the educational needs of the times were not altogether neglected. The first school was organized by Joseph Doniphan at Boonesborough in 1779.² The equipment was very crude. There were no text-books and but little paper. Smooth boards, with oak-gall and poke-berry ink were used for writing and "ciphering"; Bibles, hymn books, and other printed forms

¹ McElroy, "Kentucky in the Nation's History," p. 103, says, "But it was, after all, an Indian army, and acted with caution, characteristic of the savage. Having so easily secured numerous prisoners and a goodly pile of plunder, it declined farther to tempt fate, and hastily retired to camps beyond the Ohio."

² "Collins' History," Vol. II, p. 523. Other private schools were organized about this time. Mrs. William Coomes, according to one historian, organized a private school in the fort at Harrodsburg as early as 1776.

were used for text-books. The eagerness with which the children studied and learned overcame many handicaps, and enabled them to become strong and capable citizens of the growing Commonwealth.

Kentucky County Divided.—By 1780 the population had so increased that the legislature of Virginia decided to divide the County of Kentucky into three counties,—Jefferson, Fayette, and Lincoln.¹ John Floyd, John Todd, and Benjamin Logan were appointed Colonels in command of the militia of these counties respectively. About this time George Rogers Clark was made Brigadier General and put in command of the State troops. The chief object of this arrangement was to organize military protection against the Indians. A special surveyor was appointed for each county in order to properly survey and distribute the lands to the settlers.

An incident occurred about this time that illustrates the generous spirit of the heroic pioneer, and shows how a common danger sometimes unites friend and foe. Colonel John Floyd, learning of an attack upon a party of settlers who were moving from Squire Boone's Station near Shelbyville to a stronger settlement, hurriedly collected twenty-five men and went to their rescue. In spite of the usual precautions, Floyd fell into an ambuscade and was defeated, being himself wounded. He was retreating on foot and in danger of being overtaken by the Indians, when Captain Samuel Wells, who was mounted, came up

¹ The student should remember that in December, 1776, the Virginia Assembly first divided all the vast territory of Fincastle County into three counties—Kentucky, Montgomery and Washington.

with him. Notwithstanding the men were enemies, Captain Wells dismounted and placed Colonel Floyd on his horse and ran by his side to aid him. Both men escaped, and it is said, "they lived and died friends."

Fort Jefferson.—As early as 1778, Patrick Henry and General Clark had planned to build a fort on the Mississippi, south of the Ohio, in order to establish the claim of the United States to the Mississippi as the western boundary. In 1780, Thomas Jefferson, who had succeeded Patrick Henry as Governor of Virginia, ordered Clark to begin such a fort at once. Many Kentuckians, who feared the plan would uselessly weaken the Kentucky settlements, were opposed to it, but Clark favored the plan, and proceeded at once to organize a body of two hundred men to carry it out. The fort was located in Kentucky below the junction of the Ohio and Mississippi, and was named Fort Jefferson. It was designed to command the trade of these rivers, and as a fortress from which to direct military expeditions. Clark all the while kept a close watch upon the movements of the British and Indians north of the Ohio. Before the fort was completed he saw that an attack on the other settlements was imminent, so, with two companions, all three disguised as Indians, he made his way on foot through woods and across streams to Harrodsburg to prepare for their defense.¹

¹The route traveled by Clark and his companions lay through a trackless, Indian-haunted forest for a distance of over two hundred miles. Their appearance at Harrodsburg, in Indian disguise, surprised but greatly encouraged the settlers.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

When was Lexington settled and why was it so named? Describe the settlement of Bryan's and Ruddell's Stations. Describe the "Hard Winter" of 1779. Tell the story of the capture of Ruddell's and Martin's Stations. Describe the first schools established in Kentucky. Into what counties was the State divided at this time? Tell how Captain Wells saved the life of Colonel Floyd. Why was Fort Jefferson erected?

CHAPTER XVI

DESTRUCTION OF INDIAN TOWNS

BATTLE OF LITTLE MOUNTAIN

Expedition Against Indian Towns.—When Clark reached Harrodsburg he found the settlers unaware of their impending danger, and the land offices the centers of interest and activity. He ordered these closed, and called for volunteers in an expedition against the enemy. In the midst of these preparations came the swift and resistless attack, led by Colonel Byrd, as related in the preceding chapter. Clark at once organized and equipped a thousand men for a counter invasion. With usual promptness, he marched against the Indians at Chillicothe, Ohio, burned the town, and destroyed the crops. He next advanced against Piqua, a strongly fortified town which was garrisoned by several hundred Indians under the notorious renegade, Simon Girty.¹ After severe fight-

¹ Simon Girty's father had been killed by Indians, and Simon taken prisoner and adopted by them while yet a boy. He grew up among the Indians and adopted their cruel and cunning ways. He became a

ing the Indians fled, and the town and crops were destroyed. Colonel Benjamin Logan was sent with a detachment to a village, twenty miles ahead, to destroy stores of guns and ammunition from which the Indians were being supplied. The destruction of their villages and provisions left the Indians destitute and discouraged, upon the verge of a severe winter. Their punishment had been swift and complete and their bloody invasions had been avenged. No large bodies again entered Kentucky for some time.

Attack on Estill's Station.—In the spring of 1782, an Indian raft with no one on it was seen floating down the Kentucky River past Boonesborough. It was a sign to the keen-witted settlers that Indians were crossing the stream above and preparing to attack some of the settlements. Word was sent to Captain Estill at his station, fifteen miles south of Boonesborough, and he promptly collected a force of forty riflemen, and went in search of the Indians. On the early morning of the following day, the Indians attacked Estill's Station, killed and scalped a girl, and captured Monk, a slave who belonged to Captain Estill. Only women and children and four invalid men were in the fort at this time, but the faithful Monk told the Indians there were forty men in the fort preparing to attack them, whereupon they at once fled. As soon as the Indians withdrew, the women dispatched two boys to follow Estill's trail and to inform him of what had happened. The brave and

leader among the savages, and a relentless enemy to his own race. The settlers called him the "White Renegade," and regarded him with scorn and contempt.

swift-footed lads came up with Estill the next day, whereupon he dispatched some of his men to defend the fort, and with twenty-five others he went in pursuit of the Indians.¹

Battle of Little Mountain.—March 22, Captain Estill's party attacked twenty-five Wyandot warriors at Little Mountain, now Mount Sterling. The Indians and whites were equally matched in number, but the ground was favorable to Indian defense. The most bloody and heroic conflict, considering the number engaged, that ever took place on Kentucky soil, at once began, and lasted for two hours. "Every man to his man, and every man to his tree," at once became the battle slogan. The chief of the Wyandots fell wounded, but propped up by a log, he rallied his braves with his wild and defiant battle cry, while they fought with the courage of despair to avenge his wounds. "The Indian chief could not retreat, and without him his men would not."² At this critical moment Captain Estill sent Lieutenant Miller with five men to make a flank movement against the enemy, but Miller and his men became panic stricken and fled. The brave Estill and his remaining Spartan band fought on until Estill himself was killed. The voice of the wounded chief, by this time, was also hushed in death, and by an unspoken mutual assent the battle ceased, but the Indians remained in possession of the field. At the close of the conflict, nine Kentuckians lay dead, and of those remaining, several

¹ The lads who performed this important mission were afterwards General Samuel South and Peter Haskett.

² Collins' "History of Kentucky," Vol. II, p. 634.

were wounded. Monk, who afterwards escaped, reported that the Wyandots lost seventeen killed and wounded. Miller and his men, who fled in the midst of the battle, were ever afterwards held in dishonor by the Kentucky people, and some of them barely escaped violent punishment at the hands of the indignant pioneers. It is pleasant to remember, however, that there are but few instances of this kind to make Kentuckians hang their heads in shame or dishonor.

A Trying Time.—During these times that tried the souls of the pioneer people, one tragedy succeeded another in rapid succession. Colonel Floyd, writing to Thomas Jefferson in April, 1781, said, "We are all obliged to live in forts in this country, and notwithstanding all the caution that we use, forty-seven inhabitants have been killed and taken prisoners by savages, besides a number wounded since January last. Whole families are destroyed without regard to age or sex. Infants are torn from their mothers' arms, and their brains dashed out against trees. . . . Not a week passes, and some weeks scarcely a day, without some of our distressed inhabitants feeling the fatal effects of the infernal rage and fury of these execrable hell-hounds."¹ It is unpleasant to dwell upon so many tragedies in the early history of our fair Commonwealth, but the historian must set down the facts and leave the reader to learn from them the lessons of sacrifice and service. The lives of these Knights of the Kentucky Wilderness should teach us to make our lives sublime with deeds of courage and

¹ "Virginia State Papers," Vol. II, p. 48.

heroic action, and to appreciate our fair country that is now a land of peace and plenty.

Grand Council of Chiefs.—But all the stories of the numerous tragedies have not yet been told. At this time the confederated tribes north of the Ohio were organizing to strike a combined and decisive blow against the Kentuckians. They observed with a jealous eye, the continued invasion and settlement of their favorite hunting ground, and resolved to make one final effort to destroy the white invaders. Accordingly they arranged for a Grand Council of the chiefs and warriors of many tribes to meet at Old Chillicothe, in the summer of 1782. The British agents promised their aid in the enterprise, for they were anxious to avenge the disgrace suffered in the loss of Vincennes. The Indians and British assembled under the command of Captain William Caldwell. In a stirring speech the notorious Simon Girty endeavored to arouse the fiendish passions of the Indians against the whites, and to provoke them to acts of utmost cruelty.¹

Vain Hopes.—In the meantime news of the surrender of Cornwallis in October, 1781, had reached the settlers and produced much rejoicing. They were deluded with the vain hope that British and Indian invasions would now cease. As we have seen, in the spring of 1782, Indian attacks on the Kentuckians succeeded each other in cruel and rapid succession. In the summer these attacks suddenly ceased, and the settlers began to feel secure against further Indian troubles. But they were soon undeceived. In August numerous

¹ "Marshall," I, p. 132.

war parties destroyed many outlying settlements and laid siege to the fortified towns.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What did Clark do to check Indian invasions? Give an account of the expedition against the Indian towns. Describe the attack on Estill's Station. Give an account of the battle of Little Mountain. What did Colonel Floyd say about the perils of the settlers at this time? What was the object of the Grand Council of Chiefs? Why did the Kentuckians rejoice at the surrender of Cornwallis?

CHAPTER XVII

ATTACK ON BRYAN'S STATION

BATTLE OF BLUE LICKS

Attack on Bryan's Station.—Immediately following the council of the British and Indians at Old Chillicothe, mentioned in the preceding chapter, an army of about four hundred British and Indians, under Captains Caldwell and McKee and the crafty Girty, crossed the Ohio and moved stealthily toward Bryan's Station. Unseen and unsuspected, they came upon the Station at daybreak, August 15, 1782, just at a time when its defenders were preparing to go to the aid of Hoy's Station, which was also alarmed by the presence of Indians. On this occasion the enemy staged one of the most picturesque attacks yet made upon the Kentucky settlements. After placing the

larger part of their forces in ambush, on the side of the fort near the spring, they ordered a smaller party to take a position on the opposite side. These were to make a noisy attack, then retreat in order to draw out the defenders in pursuit of them, and thus leave the station without armed protection. The garrison



TYPICAL INDIAN CHIEFS

at once suspected the ruse, and formed a counter plot to defeat it. They immediately began to put the fort in a state of defense. The gates were barred, the port-holes and bastions were manned, water was brought in, and messengers were dispatched to neighboring stations for aid.¹ Preparations for the siege being completed, thirteen young men were sent out to

¹ Water for the station was obtained from a spring some distance from the fort, but Indians concealed near it had been discovered. The supply of water was short, and it was necessary to replenish it. How to do this, and allay the suspicions of the enemy, and thus prevent an

attack the decoy party of Indians, but were told not to pursue them too far. They sallied forth from the gate and made a clamorous attack on the decoy party, which fled. As the sounds of the noisy *mêlée* grew more distant, Girty and his dusky band of four hundred savages rushed upon the western gate, with fire-brand and rifle, in eager expectation of an easy victory. From bastion and port-hole, the pioneer riflemen suddenly poured into the advancing savage horde a deadly fire that sent them screaming and howling to cover, and left many dead and wounded before the fort. Just at this time, the sallying party came bounding back through the opposite gate, laughing, and in high spirits at the success of their maneuver. Outwitted and greatly chagrined, the enemy now began a siege in the usual way, but having no cannon they were unable to succeed against so able a defense. Every mode of attack failed, and as night approached, the Indians, fearing re-enforcements might arrive, grew restless. The fire on both sides had almost ceased, no impression had been made upon the fort, and the chiefs favored abandoning the siege at once.

Girty's Stratagem Fails.—Girty, however, determined to ask for a peaceable surrender, so he approached

immediate attack, was solved by the heroic women of the station who were persuaded to bring in a supply. To the protests of some of them, the men replied that the women were in the habit of bringing in the water every morning, a fact, they said, that was probably known to the Indians. These arguments prevailed. So, chatting and laughing as though ignorant of their danger, they passed through the rear gate with buckets and gourds, piggins and pails, to the spring and returned in safety. Thus, the courage of the pioneer women outwitted the cunning of the savage.

the fort, stood upon a large stump, and hailed the garrison. He praised their courage but assured them that further resistance was useless, since he had six hundred warriors with him, and was expecting reinforcements with cannon. He told them his name, and assured them upon his honor "that not a hair of their heads should be injured." The garrison listened in silence until a young man, by the name of Reynolds, came forward and said in reply, that he knew the speaker well and that he had a worthless dog which he had named Simon Girty because of his resemblance to him. As for re-enforcements, he told Girty that they too were expecting aid, and if he and his murderous band remained twenty-four hours longer, their scalps would be found drying on the roofs of the fort. Girty retired, greatly offended, but by daybreak the next morning the enemy had deserted their camp in apparent haste, leaving their fires burning.

Pursuit of the Indians.—By this time news of the attack had reached other settlements, and companies of armed men were on their way to Bryan's Station. By night, one hundred and eighty-two horsemen had assembled. A council was held, and it was decided to give pursuit to the Indians without waiting for the arrival of expected re-enforcements under Colonel Logan. The Indians had retreated leisurely, purposely leaving a trail easily followed, which Colonel Boone called "danger signs." The pursuing party was led by Colonel John Todd, the ranking officer, Colonels Trigg and Boone, and Majors Harlan, McBride, McGary, and Levi Todd. On the morning of August 19, the Kentuckians came in sight of the

enemy near Blue Licks, where they halted and held a council of war.

The Indians had crossed the Licking River and were believed to be planning an ambushade. Colonel Boone who was familiar with Indian tactics, and knowing the locality was favorable to an ambushade, urged that they wait for Colonel Logan's troops. His opinion was strongly seconded by other officers, and his counsel would probably have prevailed had it not been for the reckless daring of one man. Major McGary, filled with a furious hatred of Indians because of the murder of his son by some of them, suddenly uttered a defiant cry and "spurred his horse into the stream, waved his hat over his head, and shouted aloud: 'Let all who are not cowards follow me!' The words and the action together, produced an electrical effect. The mounted men dashed recklessly into the river, each striving to be foremost. The footmen were mingled with them in one rolling and irregular mass."¹ The reckless Kentuckians struggled across the ford, up the bank in mad pursuit, observing neither prudence nor order.

Battle of Blue Licks.—When they reached the spot mentioned by Boone as favorable to an ambushade, they suddenly found themselves entangled in the wings of a savage net and exposed to a deadly fire from an unseen foe. Officers and men rallied and fought bravely against overwhelming odds. In a few minutes many of the officers and men had been slain, and a disorderly flight followed. The Indians threw away their rifles and pursued the Kentuckians with toma-

¹ "McClung's Sketches." Quoted by Collins, II, p. 657.

hawk and knife, overtaking and killing many of them. In five minutes about seventy brave Kentuckians had fallen, twelve were wounded, and seven captured. Among the slain was Colonel John Todd, one of the most talented lawyers, fearless officers and lovable gentlemen among the pioneers. Still other leaders who fell were Colonel Trigg, Majors Harlan, McBride and Boone's son. Colonel Logan came up later with strong re-enforcements but the Indians had crossed the Ohio and nothing remained to do but bury the dead where they had fallen. Every settlement mourned the loss of some honored man, beloved friend or relative. Wives, mothers, and orphans refused to be consoled. By the rash act of one man, an unnecessary tragedy had been enacted, and untold grief visited upon the innocent. But the Spartan spirit of the pioneer was now aroused, and a general clamor for revenge was heard throughout the border.

The Indians Punished.—George Rogers Clark had never abandoned his plans to secure a united effort to invade the British and Indian strongholds north of the Ohio, and by a decisive blow forever destroy their power. He now saw an opportunity to put into effect a part of his cherished plan. He at once issued a call for a thousand riflemen. These assembled at the mouth of the Licking River, in November, 1782, and from the site of what is now Cincinnati, they took up their march against the Indian towns on the Little Miami. The invaders moved silently and rapidly, and fell upon the Indian towns like a thunderclap, destroying everything before them. The Indians fled in dismay, many of them being pursued and slain. Their

winter stores were destroyed, and their spirit so completely broken that they never again returned to Kentucky in large invading forces. With the close of the Revolution, and the signing of the treaty with Great Britain in 1782, the hopes of the settlers revived. For the most part, the battle ground was now shifted to the North. The bloody war period of Kentucky was closed, and British and Indian power in the State was forever broken. Out of this heroic strife emerged the State of Kentucky whose star was soon to take its place in the blue field of our national emblem.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Describe the attack on Bryan's Station. How did the heroism of the women save the station? What strategy did Girty attempt? What is your opinion of Major McGary's conduct? Give an account of the Battle of Blue Licks. How were the Indians punished? Were the white men justified in burning their towns and destroying their provisions?

CHAPTER XVIII

ORIGIN OF THE PIONEER PEOPLE

THE story of the settlement of our State would be incomplete without an account of the kinds of people who first occupied it. As in other states of the Union the settlers of Kentucky came from many countries, but the greater number were of English origin.

Development of the Pioneer.—When our ancestors came from Europe they settled upon unknown, savage shores amid wild surroundings that tested the most dauntless spirits and frightened the weak. So it came about that the best man-making blood remained and survived, while many of the weak and unfit perished, or returned to Europe. From the beginning, our continent was a fiery furnace for separating human dross from the shining metal out of which has been forged our great Nation. The permanent settlers of America were a hardy, strong-minded people who came to this country to escape political and religious persecution. Rather than bow to the tyranny of kings or submit to religious intolerance, they became self-exiled for conscience' and truth's sake. The dangers and hardships these sturdy, liberty-loving people had to meet and overcome in America, still further prepared them to conquer the New World, and to found a free government. Most of the timid, and idlers, and the ne'er-dowells settled down to a life of ease and indolence in the

towns of the coast plain. The pioneers who moved across the mountains, founded homes, and carved new states out of the wilderness, were generally of a hardy Anglo-Saxon, Teutonic and Scotch type. Having come from denselv populated countries, the early settlers, at first, were satisfied with small farms. But as the vastness of the American continent became known to them, they were moved by a desire to press toward the border and settle the larger and more fertile areas of land. So it happened, as it always does, that the vanguard of the pioneers was composed of the most ambitious and adventurous people of the older colonies. The farther westward these heralds of the coming Republic traveled, the freer and more self-reliant their spirits became; this is why they resented tyrannical government. In the light of these facts, it can readily be understood why, in the Revolution, there were but few Tories among the backwoodsmen.

The Rising Tide.—After these bordermen had crossed the Blue Ridge Mountains into the fertile Shenandoah and adjacent valleys, and were pushing the frontier up the slopes of the Alleghenies, the fame of Kentucky's fertility and beauty was spread among them. At this time there were two human tides flowing toward Cumberland Gap—one, northwest up the valleys of the Savannah, Santee, and other rivers of this region; the other, southwest up the Shenandoah and parallel valleys. These two streams of settlers, both the result of following fertile valleys, came together in the Holston and Clinch River region in western North Carolina and Virginia, about 1750 to 1775. •

Effects of Two Ideals.—Most of the Kentucky pioneers came from Virginia, which had been settled chiefly by people from the rural districts of England, while the colonists of New England came, principally, from the towns of Britain, and were more generally trained in the industrial arts. For this reason, and because of the infertility of the land they had settled, the northern colonists naturally founded towns and developed manufacturing industries, while their southern neighbors became farmers and land owners.¹ The desire for land caused the southern colonists to push the pioneer border rapidly westward, while the New England settlers established themselves in towns and densely populated communities. As already related, most of the English settlers were a sturdy Anglo-Saxon stock, used to rural occupations and the freedom of country life and thought. They were land hungry, and faced the dangers of the wilderness to satisfy their desire.

The Scotch-Irish.—In 1698 an epidemic of commercial and religious persecutions broke out against some Scotch-Presbyterian settlements in Ulster, Ireland, that resulted in many of these people coming to America.² From 1719 to 1792, a period that covered

¹ The student should study a large map of this region and note the geographical relation of its valleys to Cumberland Gap as a gateway to Kentucky.

² In 1611, to offset the growth of the Catholic population, King James of England, an ardent Protestant, induced many thrifty Scotch and rural Englishmen to settle in Ulster. These "picked" Protestant settlers built up so many rival industries that they aroused the jealousy of the English manufacturers, who caused oppressive commercial laws to be passed against them. Many of the descendants of these persecuted people found their way to America and to Kentucky.

the American Revolution, these thrifty, intelligent people came in a steady stream to America. In one week, in 1727, six ship loads of them landed at Philadelphia. In two years, 1773-1774, more than 30,000 of them came; and at the breaking out of the Revolution there were about 500,000 of them, or one-sixth of the entire population of America.¹ Having come from Ireland, these Scotch settlers became known as "Scotch-Irish." When these immigrants arrived on our shores they found most of the country along the coast already taken up, and being "able bodied, hardy and stout men," and "very greedy after land," they settled, principally, on the western border of North Carolina, Virginia and Pennsylvania.

Other Elements.—About 1754 a large group of Scotch Highlanders settled in North Carolina, and like their Scotch-Irish brethren, many of them moved up to the mountain border of the State. Later still, there came from France the Huguenots, driven hence by religious persecution. These were likewise an intelligent and thrifty Protestant people who pushed on toward the border of the states in which they settled. There was also a sprinkling of the Irish and other elements that swelled the human tide which was about to overflow the mountain passes into Kentucky. As if led by the hand of Destiny, the fittest people of several nations were gathering upon the border of the eastern colonies preparatory to colonizing the West. With the breaking out of the Revolution came reports of the hunters and explorers concerning the fertile lands, abundance of game, and the delightful climate of Kentucky. The

¹ Fiske, "Old Virginia and Her Neighbors," II, p. 394.

story of how these border people conquered the wilderness and settled Kentucky has been told in previous chapters.

The Backwoodsman.—Most of the Kentucky settlers were trained pioneers before they came; those who were not, were composed of a rugged breed that quickly adapted themselves to backwoods life. Separated from the nearest eastern settlements by almost impassable, savage-haunted mountains, shut in by gloomy forests, and threatened on all sides by savage foes, it was necessary for the pioneer to adapt himself to a semi-savage state. While he fought back Indian foes, and subdued the wilderness, he himself was molded by his harsh surroundings into a rude backwoodsman. As an eminent historian has said, “The Wilderness masters the colonist. It finds him a European in dress, industries, tools, modes of travel and thought. It takes him from the sailing ship and puts him in the birch canoe. It strips off the garments of civilization and arrays him in the hunting shirt and moccasin. It puts him in the log cabin of the Cherokee and Iroquois and runs an Indian palisade around him.”¹ In short, it was only by adapting himself to his perilous surroundings that the Kentucky pioneer successfully founded our great Commonwealth.

Separated as they were from the eastern settlements, and dependent upon their own courage and resources, we can readily understand how the pioneers became self-reliant, independent spirits that fretted under too many laws, and resisted any that were imposed without their consent. “Under the belief that

¹ Turner, “The Frontier in American History,” p. 4.

all men going into vacant lands have the right to shape their own political institutions, the riflemen of western Pennsylvania, Kentucky and Tennessee, during the Revolution, protested against the rule of governments east of the mountains and asserted with manly independence their right to self-government."¹ For this reason it may be safely said, that democracy sprang from the border people of America and was the chief force that broke up charter and proprietary forms of government which had been imported from Europe. Indeed, it was this same spirit that caused the American colonies to throw off the yoke of the mother country and establish a "government of the people, by the people and for the people."

The Soldier Settler.—Even during the Revolutionary War, a steady stream of immigrants continued to settle in Kentucky. It is estimated that by 1785 there were 30,000 people in the State. At the close of the Revolution the tide of immigration was greatly increased by the coming of many Revolutionary soldiers. Some came to renew the fortunes they had lost in the war, while many others were moved by the unrest that followed the conflict. This soldier element was possibly the most important one that came to the State in its early history. Much of love of liberty and the fighting spirit of the Kentuckians was the offspring of the Revolution. While the blood of many nations flows in the veins of the Kentuckians, the original strong type of English and Scotch-Irish has been preserved. This is due largely to the man-making forces of nature. The solemn forests, the everlasting hills

¹ Turner, "The Frontier in American History," p. 169.

and mountains, and the changing landscapes seem to have a way of making a greater people than bare plains or smoky cities.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What kind of people settled America? What effect did the hardships and dangers of the new country have upon them? What was the character of the people who settled Kentucky? What did they most desire? Why did the northern colonies found towns and the southern colonies become large land owners? Who were the Scotch-Irish people? The Huguenots? Explain the colonizing movements that led to the settlement of Kentucky. What part did the soldier-settler have in establishing our State?

CHAPTER XIX

SEPARATION FROM VIRGINIA

THE STRUGGLE FOR STATEHOOD ¹

FROM 1783 to 1789 is known as the "Critical Period" in our nation's history. During this time the weakness of the Articles of Confederation became so evident that there arose a general clamor for a stronger central government. Happily these trying years of jealousy and strife among the independent states resulted in forming the strong Federal Government under which we now live. While these things were

¹ An excellent account of Kentucky's struggle for statehood is given in Chapter IV, "Kentucky in the Nation's History," McElroy. Also Chapter VIII, "Kentucky," by Shaler.

happening in the East, Kentucky was struggling for independent statehood.¹

Isolation of Kentucky.—During the bloody years of the Revolution the Kentucky pioneers, with but little aid from Virginia, had waged a continuous warfare against the savages and had purchased by hardships and suffering an enduring claim on the West that laid the foundation for many new states. Virginia was cut off from her Kentucky colony by a mountain wall, and separated from her by hundreds of miles of trackless forests. For six years she had been engaged in a war for independence that exhausted all her resources. Under these conditions it was impossible for her to render much aid to the Kentucky colony.

Reasons for Separation.—Inasmuch as the Kentucky settlers had by their suffering and sacrifice secured the beginnings of a new state, it was but natural that they should desire to separate themselves from Virginia and establish their own independence. Virginia deserved and still held the warm affections of the Kentucky people. But it was urged, with reason and justice by the Kentuckians, that it was not practicable for a state so far away, and unacquainted with the difficulties and problems of a remote territory, to rule it justly and successfully.

The First Convention.—The question was a difficult and important one that demanded calm and thoughtful action. Accordingly a convention was called at Dan-

¹ (Note to teacher): This period of our Nation's history should be studied in connection with this chapter. It was an important as well as a critical period both in the history of our State and our Government.

ville, on December 27, 1784, to "devise if possible some means of preserving their country from that immediate destruction which seemed then impending."¹ After prolonged debate the convention unanimously decided that whatever was done should be in accordance with the laws of Virginia. The convention passed a resolution calling for the election of representatives to another convention to be held the 23d of the following May.

The Second Convention.—The second convention met and resolved that a petition be presented to the Assembly of Virginia asking that Kentucky be made into a separate State, and recommending that it be admitted into the Union of the United States. Instead of carrying out these resolutions, action on them was referred to a future meeting and thus the convention failed to accomplish the purpose for which it had been called.

Causes of Discontent.—All of these delays, and the manifest weakness of the newly organized Confederation of States in permitting the British to still hold numerous posts in the Northwest, and the rumors that Congress was about to abandon all claims to the navigation of the Mississippi for twenty-five years, caused a general murmur of discontent.² The Kentuckians realized they could not, with safety or profit, carry

¹ Littell's "Political Transactions," p. 16.

² The Spaniards held all the country on both sides of the lower Mississippi and had the power to control its navigation. The Kentuckians resented any efforts to prevent them using the river for traffic and travel. John Jay, Secretary of Foreign Affairs, and the Spanish envoy had conversations concerning the closing of the Mississippi for twenty-five years, but no action was taken.

their goods over the long and rugged roads to and from the Eastern States, and that the closing of the Mississippi would consequently destroy their industries and commerce. Indian depredations also continued, and either through weakness or indifference, neither Virginia nor Congress did much for the protection of the Kentucky colonies. Furthermore, the Kentuckians were not allowed to make military expeditions against the Indians without the consent of Virginia. Therefore, they were compelled to await the attacks of the savages and fight only a defensive warfare. On one occasion a man was killed by Indians in Lincoln County. A company was quickly raised that pursued the murderers into Tennessee and defeated them. Flushed with victory, they came upon and attacked another party of Indians and killed seven of them. The friendly tribe to which the latter party belonged, complained to the Governor of Virginia, who instructed Harry Innes, the Attorney General of the District, to take necessary steps "to prevent and punish, if possible, all unjust violences." This just and reasonable order was misunderstood, and as it was passed from mouth to mouth it was so exaggerated, that the people of Kentucky came to believe that Virginia had actually forbidden them to protect themselves. These and many other incidents were used by the enemies of Virginia to inflame the Kentuckians against the mother State. To solve these problems satisfactorily to Virginia and the Kentuckians became the work of all the conventions that were to follow.

An Address to the People.—The petition to Virginia, that was passed by the second convention, though rea-

sonable and mild in tone, was never delivered. The convention, however, gave out an address to the "Inhabitants of the District of Kentucky," which caused much debate, and increased the desire to separate from the mother State. The "address" is supposed to have been written by James Wilkinson, a scholarly though unscrupulous man, about whose treasonable doings we shall learn later. Some of the reasons set forth for separation were,—that many of the Virginia laws were oppressive to the people of the Kentucky District; that "We have no power to call out the militia—unless in case of actual invasion"; that we have no power to enforce laws or grant pardons, and that "We are ignorant of the laws that are passed until a long time after they are enacted." It was further declared that tax money was drawn from them to support the mother State, and that the commercial interests of Kentucky were different from those of Virginia. In addition to these things the address set forth "That it is expedient and necessary for this District to be separated from Virginia and established into a sovereign independent State, to be known by the name of the 'Commonwealth of Kentucky.'"¹ Thus the second convention failed to accomplish the purpose for which it had been elected, but with unusual caution called for a third convention to ratify what had been done. Kentucky desired separation, and Virginia did not oppose it. Only a few minor conditions stood in the way, but the prudence shown by the leaders in both states in bringing about the in-

¹ Quotations are from the resolutions passed by the second convention.

dependence of Kentucky, and her admission into the Union, is rare.

The Third Convention.—The third convention met at Danville in August, 1785, and elected Samuel McDowell, president, and Thomas Todd, secretary, of the convention.¹ The convention was composed of thirty representatives. General James Wilkinson, a Revolutionary officer who had recently come to Kentucky, contrived by his dazzling eloquence and political scheming to have himself elected as a member from Fayette County. This convention discarded the mild petition that was passed by the previous assembly and substituted for it one that was more of a demand than a petition. George Muter, Chief Justice of the District, and General Harry Innes, District Attorney, were appointed to present it to the Virginia Assembly, and to use their influence to secure its passage. In spite of its tone, the Virginia Assembly received it kindly and at once passed the “First Enabling Act,” by which Kentucky delegates were to be elected to meet at Danville in September, 1786, to determine whether the people desired to separate from Virginia and form a new State.

The First Enabling Act.—This “First Enabling Act” recommended separation, and provided that “The free male inhabitants” of the seven counties² of the District of Kentucky should elect representatives to meet at Danville, the fourth Monday in September,

¹ Samuel McDowell and Thomas Todd were elected president and secretary, respectively, of each of the ten conventions that were held.

² The counties that composed the District at this time were Jefferson, Fayette, Lincoln, Nelson, Bourbon, Mercer and Madison.

1786, to determine whether it was the will of the people to become an independent State. It further provided that the new State should assume a part of the public debt of Virginia, that the private rights of citizens derived under the laws of Virginia should remain secure, and that equal taxation and equal security of all property rights be insured to the people. All land titles made prior to 1788 were to remain valid, the Ohio to be kept open to free navigation, and all disputes which might arise between Kentucky and Virginia to be submitted to arbitration. The "Enabling Act" further provided, that if the convention should decide in favor of separation, then it should fix a date, prior to September 1, 1787, when Virginia's authority over the Kentucky District would cease, provided that the United States Congress should consent to the separation, and agree to admit the new State into the Federal Union. The conditions imposed by Virginia were fair and reasonable but they required delay. The majority of the people recognized the sense and justice of the requirements of the mother State but there were many who were eager for immediate separation, and who sought to stir up opposition.

Court Party and Country Party.—The leader of the opposition was James Wilkinson, and the party he represented became known as the "Court party" on account of the official positions held by its leaders. Those opposed to hasty action were led by Humphrey Marshall and became known as the "Country party." These leaders were opposing candidates for election to the fourth convention from Fayette County. Wil-

kinson urged the people to disregard the act of Virginia, and to declare their independence at once, but Marshall counselled calm and considerate action. By his brilliant oratory, his pleasing personality, and by fraud, his enemies declared, Wilkinson was elected.

The reader should remember that at this time, 1787, the new National Constitution had not been adopted, that the National Government was new, untried and hesitant. Hotly debated political ideals were numerous but unorganized. These were days of government beginnings, state and national, and we must not wonder that action came so slowly. The political pathfinders of the time were blazing new trails, and uncertain of their course. In time, as we shall see in the next chapter, the political woes of Kentucky passed, and she proudly entered the Union.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What is meant by the "Critical Period" in our nation's history? Why did Kentucky desire independent statehood? Why were the several conventions called? What caused the discontent of the people? Why did the Kentuckians wish to control the Mississippi River? Tell what was given out by the second convention in its address to the people. What did the third convention do? What was the first enabling act? Why did the people and their leaders hesitate so long in setting up a government?

CHAPTER XX

KENTUCKY ENTERS THE UNION

WHEN the time set for the meeting of the fourth convention arrived, many of the delegates were absent with Clark and Logan on expeditions against the Indians.¹ When the delegates met it was found that “a number sufficient to proceed to business could not be had.” Those who did meet chose John Marshall, afterwards the “Great Chief Justice,” to present to the Virginia Assembly the nature of their unfortunate situation and to ask for a change in the conditions that it was now too late to fulfill.

The Second Enabling Act.—Marshall urged the request of the Kentuckians but it was not granted. Instead, however, a “Second Enabling Act” was passed by the Virginia Assembly renewing Virginia’s assent to separation, but requiring the re-election of delegates to another convention, and fixing the time for the separation to take place January 1, 1789, provided Congress should agree, prior to July 4, 1788, to receive Kentucky into the Union. It is plain that Virginia was willing to the separation of Kentucky, provided she agreed to enter the Union, and that Congress would admit her. This wise and patriotic policy of the mother State, however, caused still further delay and produced a murmur of anger and impatience in Kentucky. But a majority of the people submitted

¹ See Chapter XXI. Also “Kentucky in the Nation’s History,” McElroy, p. 130.

patiently rather than to violate the law and incur the ill will of Virginia.

The Fourth Convention.—When a quorum of the fourth convention finally got together in January, 1787, it was found that the “Second Enabling Act” had deprived them of all authority to act, by requiring the re-election of delegates the following August. Realizing that they were without authority to act, and that the proposed separation from Virginia had to be postponed, they disbanded in anger and returned to their homes. Three years had passed and four conventions had assembled since the people had begun to clamor for statehood, but the desired goal seemed as far away as ever. A general murmur of discontent arose throughout the entire District.



JAMES WILKINSON

Disloyal Busybodies.—James Wilkinson and other political busybodies advised more boldly than ever, “an immediate declaration of independence,” regardless of the wishes of Virginia or Congress. The intrigue with Spain, Indian depredations, the proposal of Jay to close the Mississippi to navigation, and the delays imposed by Virginia created great unrest among the people. In spite of designing enemies and many disappointments, however, the patriotism and

good sense of the Kentuckians prevailed and saved the State from dangerous political blunders.

The Fifth Convention.—The re-elected delegates to the fifth convention met in September, 1787, and unanimously decided that it was “expedient for and the will of the good people of the District” to be separated from Virginia according to conditions required by its Legislature. It adopted a petition to Congress asking admission into the Union, and secured from Virginia the appointment of John Brown as the first Congressional delegate of the District, to deliver the petition.

The Delays of Congress.—Now the “Old Congress” was in confusion while the adoption of the “New Constitution” was proceeding in the several states. So it came about that the admission of Kentucky did not come before the Old Congress until it was too late to act upon it by the 4th of July, as required by the “Second Enabling Act.” Consequently, Kentucky’s petition for admission into the Union was referred to the Congress that was being organized under the “New Roof.”¹

The Sixth Convention.—The delegates to the sixth convention, whose duty it was to form a State Constitution, met at Danville, July 28, 1788. Brown reported to this convention that, in spite of his best efforts, his mission had failed. He openly charged the New England States with the delay, because, he said, they were unwilling to further increase southern representation in Congress. He declared that this jealousy would con-

¹ The Old and New Constitutions were popularly called the “Old Roof” and the “New Roof.”

tinue, that Kentucky, as a member of the Union, would not be secure in her rights with Spain, and, therefore, she should “erect herself into an independent government.” He said that the Spanish minister “had authority to grant to the people of Kentucky” certain privileges “on terms of mutual advantage, if they would erect themselves into an independent state . . . but that this privilege can never be extended to them while a part of the United States. . . .” Facing another delay, and the increasing discontent of the people, members of the convention were uncertain as to the best course to pursue. They had set about the framing of a constitution for Kentucky preparatory to entering the Union, only to learn that Congress had not considered their petition. After days of earnest debate, a resolution was passed recommending the election of five delegates from each County. These were to meet at Danville the following November to consider the admission of the Kentucky District, as an independent member of the Union, and to form a constitution for its government. These delays were used by members of the Court party to inflame the people against Virginia and the Federal Government.

Loyalty of the People.—In spite of the zeal of the leaders of the Court party, and in spite of the delays and the intrigues of Spanish and British agents, the patriotism and good sense of the Kentucky people prevailed in the election of loyal delegates to the seventh convention. By his avowal of loyalty to the people, and his pretended devotion to their interests, Wilkinson contrived to have himself elected as a member from Fayette County.

The Seventh Convention.—The newly elected delegates to the seventh convention met in Danville in November. The assembly was composed of members of both the Court party and the Country party. Wilkinson opened the debate and declared that there was but one way to obtain state independence, and that way was to set up a separate, independent State without the consent of Virginia or of Congress. He was granted permission to “read an essay” on the navigation of the Mississippi, in which he set forth the rights of the Western people to the use of this waterway, and declared that Spain would grant it to Kentucky as an independent State but not as a member of the Union. He said the prosperity of Kentucky depended upon the navigation of the Mississippi, and that Brown had “information of the first importance” from the Spanish Minister, Gardoqui, which he would furnish to the convention if desired. Brown then arose and declared that he could not disclose what had occurred in private, but that he would say, “provided we are unanimous, everything we wish for is within our reach.” Wilkinson closed his speech by declaring that if Spain should fail to treat with them, England stood ready to assist them in securing their rights. Abundant evidence exists of a deep plot among some of the leaders of the Court party, which, had it prevailed, would have been disgraceful to the name and disastrous to the welfare of Kentucky. The delegates were, however, by no means “unanimous” in their opinions. A vote of thanks was extended to Wilkinson for his “essay,” but the delegates and the people of Kentucky were generally loyal, and refused to act

without the consent of Virginia and Congress. After passing a resolution providing for the appointment of "a committee to draw up a decent and respectful address to the people of Virginia, for obtaining the independence of the District of Kentucky agreeable to the late resolutions and recommendations of Congress," the seventh convention adjourned. Notwithstanding the intrigues of the leaders of the Court party and many provoking delays, the address to Virginia was "decent and respectful." Doubtless this phrase was purposely chosen by its authors as a just rebuke to the scheming leader of the Court party.

The Third Enabling Act.—When the Virginia Assembly learned that the old Confederate Congress had not acted upon the petition of the District of Kentucky, it passed a "Third Enabling Act," showing clearly that Virginia did not object to the separation of Kentucky as soon as possible. This act provided, however, that the new State should pay "a portion of the domestic debt of Virginia then existing," which was incurred by military expeditions for the benefit of Kentucky. It also provided that the State should depend "upon Virginia as to the time for completing the titles and surveys to lands given to officers and soldiers of Virginia."¹ It made provisions for another convention to meet at Danville on the third Monday in July, 1789, to consider the advisability of separation upon the conditions set forth, and to provide for a ninth convention to frame a Constitution.

¹ Many Virginia soldiers of the French and Indian War and of the Revolution had been granted lands in Kentucky by the mother State. Virginia, rightly, desired to make the titles of these lands secure to her soldier citizens.

The Eighth Convention.—The eighth convention met at Danville July 20, and took up the question of separation. It passed resolutions to be sent to Virginia protesting against the two new conditions mentioned above, and asked that they be withdrawn, and that the terms of separation be made “equal to those formerly offered by Virginia, and agreed to on the part of the said District.”

The Fourth Enabling Act.—The Virginia Assembly regarded the new conditions as just, but repealed them and provided for a “Fourth Enabling Act” which contained about the same conditions laid down in the first two. It further provided for a ninth convention to meet at Danville on July 26, 1790, to decide “whether it is expedient and the will of the good people of the District,” upon the conditions set forth, that Kentucky should become a separate State. If this convention should accept these conditions, it was to arrange for a tenth assembly which should frame a Constitution.

The Ninth Convention.—The ninth convention met at Danville at the time required and accepted the conditions laid down by the mother State. It drew up an address to Virginia announcing its acceptance of the conditions, and asked her aid in obtaining the admission of Kentucky into the Union.

Congress Acts.—In the meantime, the “Old Congress” had given place to the New, Washington had been elected President and a strong Federal Constitution had been adopted. James Marshall prepared a memorial address to “The President of the United States and to Congress” which expressed a warm attachment to the Federal Government, and asked that

Kentucky be admitted into the Union within the time prescribed by Virginia. After adopting this memorial, and providing for the election of the tenth convention to choose officers, frame a Constitution, and provide laws to remain in force until the new legislature should alter or repeal them, the ninth convention adjourned. Shortly afterwards, Washington strongly recommended the admission of Kentucky and Congress acted.

The Tenth Convention.—Kentucky Enters the Union.—On February 4, 1791, an act to admit the State into the Union June 1, 1792, was passed by Congress and signed by President Washington. The tenth and last convention met at Danville April 3, 1792, to form a constitution for the new Commonwealth, and on June 1, Kentucky, “The Pioneer State of the West,” entered the Union. Thus after years of waiting and many provoking delays, and not a little treason on the part of some brilliant leaders, Kentucky became the fifteenth State to enroll under the Stars and Stripes; and to this flag of freemen, born of patriots’ blood amidst the crash of battle, she has ever remained true.

“Let mightier deeds be thine! Arise!

Let all the world behold thee set

A constellation in the skies

Where all thy sister stars are met!”

—MADISON CAWEIN, “Kentucky.”

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What hindered the meeting of the fourth convention? What was the second enabling act and why was it passed? What was done by the fourth convention? What was the situation in Congress and how did it affect the affairs of Kentucky? Tell what was done by each of the remaining conventions. Describe the third and fourth enabling acts. What was the purpose of the tenth convention? When did Kentucky enter the Union?

CHAPTER XXI

SIDELIGHTS ON KENTUCKY'S STRUGGLE FOR STATEHOOD

Kentucky's Part in the Revolution.—The story of Kentucky's struggle for statehood has swept us over important matters which we must now turn back to consider. When the treaty of peace that closed the war with Great Britain was signed at Paris in 1783, the Kentucky people were overjoyed, for they had reasons to believe that the British posts in the Northwest would be given up at once, and that Indian hostilities would cease. But upon various pretexts these posts were still held, and British agents still secretly encouraged Indian depredations on the Kentucky settlements. Furthermore, the Federal Government was young and untried, and its weak policy toward foreign nations, and its neglect of the border colonies caused much anger and disappointment. For years, French, Spanish, and even British secret agents were engaged in schemes for separating the West, especially Kentucky, from the Union. France had assisted the Americans more because of her desire to injure England than on account of her love of the Colonies; she now secretly planned to limit the boundary of the United States to the territory east of the Alleghenies. However, the great French patriot, Lafayette, and many other Frenchmen gave a noble and unselfish

service to the cause of American Independence that justly won the warm gratitude of the people.

Spain controlled the navigation of the lower Mississippi and prevented the Kentucky people from using it for travel and for transporting their merchandise to and from market. During the trying years of the Revolution the Kentuckians, unaided, founded their homes in the solitudes of the wilderness. They had stood guard at the back door of the eastern states and warded off many savage blows that would otherwise have fallen upon the border settlements of Virginia and Pennsylvania. Many who now lived in the State had fought with Clark to conquer and hold the Northwest Territory, or had followed the gallant Shelby in the decisive and bloody battle of King's Mountain.¹

¹ Colonel Ferguson, who commanded the left wing of Cornwallis' army, threatened to hang the border patriots of the Watauga and Holston region unless they submitted to the British. The threat aroused the backwoodsmen to action. Isaac Shelby conceived a plan to attack Ferguson. Couriers were sent in every direction to call the backwoods riflemen to arms. Speedier than the bearers of the fiery cross of the Highlands these messengers rode from valley to valley, across mountains and streams, calling together Campbell, McDowell, Sevier, Cleveland, and their followers. The united clans pursued the retreating Ferguson night and day through fair and foul weather, leaving behind many of the foot-soldiers and exhausted horsemen. October 7, 1780, they overtook Ferguson strongly entrenched on King's Mountain, North Carolina, and surrounded him. The Americans and British were each about a thousand strong. The patriots remembering the slaughter of Buford and his men by Tarleton, after they had surrendered, cried, "Remember Buford," pressed forward and poured into the British a deadly rifle fire. "Every man be his own officer" and "shoot like hell, and fight like devils," cried Colonel Campbell. "Give them the bayonet," commanded Ferguson; give them "Indian play" urged the patriot leaders. Before the British bayonets the riflemen fell back, only to return to the bloody attack. In vain Ferguson rallied his men, and vain was the call of his silver whistle. Crowded to the mountain crest, the British received the concentrated fire of the

Thousands had forfeited their lives and lay scattered in unmarked graves from Cumberland Gap to Vincennes. Yet, in spite of these woes, they had built their homes, cleared the lands and established a strong colony in a far-off wilderness. Through the deeds of this small group of backwoodsmen a permanent hold on the West was established, and foreign empires were prevented from springing up on our border. A favored land was settled and held for thousands of Revolutionary soldiers who had lost their fortunes in the War of Independence, and whose lives seemed dark and unpromising. Their holdings insured the future development of the great West that finally extended the boundary of our Nation to the Pacific Ocean. The "Wilderness Road" opened the way in the nick of time, for over it immediately came the Anglo-American pioneer to lay an enduring claim to the vast forests and plains of an almost unknown region. The hand of Providence seemed to be guiding the destiny of a coming Nation. The grip of the Kentucky settlers strengthened the eastern colonies and at the same time weakened the hold of Spain in the South, and probably prevented the establishment of a Spanish empire on our border. In spite of the in-

patriots and were soon compelled to surrender. Few escaped. Three hundred lay dead or seriously wounded and the rest were made prisoners, while the Americans lost only ninety killed and wounded. The "hornets" of the border had destroyed the strong left wing of Cornwallis' army. The brave Ferguson lay dead and the notes of his silver whistle were forever silenced. The drooping hopes of the Revolutionary patriots were revived. For the number engaged, King's Mountain was probably the most bloody and the most important battle of the Revolution. (An interesting account of this battle will be found in "The Winning of the West," by Roosevelt, Vol. III, Chapter V.)

trigues of secret agents of foreign nations, in spite of the disloyalty of some misguided leaders, in spite of the neglect of Virginia and the weakness of Congress, the people were bone of bone of their brethren of the eastern states and remained loyal.

It was a critical point in the life of Kentucky in 1784 that a notable man came to the State who was to play the villain's part in her struggle for independence and membership in the Union. General James Wilkinson was a Revolutionary officer of brilliant attainments and pleasing personality. He soon sensed the grievances of the Kentuckians and immediately set about adding fuel to the flame of their discontent. Wilkinson was the chief agent of a great trading company of Philadelphia, but he also became a citizen of Kentucky, and from the time of his arrival, took an active interest in the affairs of the State. In the summer of 1787, he gathered together a large cargo of tobacco, beeves, pelts, and other products and went to New Orleans. Miro, the Spanish governor, ordered this seized, but after Wilkinson explained that the real object of his visit was "to obtain the separation of Kentucky from the United States, and then to deliver the District thus separated into the hands of his Majesty, the King of Spain, to become a province of that power," the Kentuckians were granted all privileges of trade. Wilkinson sold his cargo at high prices, was furnished with a large sum of money by the Spanish, and returned to Kentucky to show the people the power he could wield with the Spanish Government, and some of the advantages they would obtain by becoming Spanish subjects. There are reasons to believe that had he failed

in this, he was prepared to turn to England for aid in the separation of the Kentucky District from the Union. Upon his return, he entered Lexington with all the pomp and fanfare of royalty, riding in a carriage drawn by four horses, and accompanied by attendants. He gave brilliant balls, fine dinners, and much entertainment to young and old, all of which was probably paid for out of his ill-gotten Spanish gold. He was the hero of the day, and was loudly praised for what he had done for Kentucky.

Wilkinson's Associates.—John Brown, Harry Innes, and Benjamin Sebastian, who were members of the Supreme Court of the Kentucky District, were accused of giving their support to Wilkinson's treasonable schemes. Later, Sebastian was convicted by the Kentucky House of Representatives for receiving a Spanish pension of two thousand dollars a year. But as we have already seen, the patriotism and good sense of the Kentucky people prevailed, and the State was saved from the day of small things. "Her interests became those of a nation which was bound to succeed greatly or fail greatly. Her fate was linked for weal or for woe with the fate of the mighty Republic."¹

Failure of Wilkinson's Treason.—Wilkinson and his followers, who were called the Court party, were very active in their disloyalty but, fortunately for Kentucky, they were in the minority. The Country party, led by such far-seeing patriots as the Marshalls and McDowells, prevented the disaster that would have followed an unlawful separation. The Court party was

¹ Roosevelt, "The Winning of the West," Vol. IV, p. 263.

not only in the minority but many members of it were against an unlawful separation, so, at no time was there great danger of Kentucky making the mistake that Tennessee had made in her recent revolutionary action.¹

The first issue of the *Kentucky Gazette* under the management of John and Fielding Bradford was published August, 1787. It was the first newspaper printed in Kentucky and some of the larger type were cut out of dogwood. The printing press had been brought down the Ohio River on a flatboat. Through its columns, the people were kept informed of the doings of the conventions, besides it gave the meager news of that early time. In it were published articles for and against the separation of the State from the Union.

Indian Fatalities.—During the period of Kentucky's struggle for statehood, described in previous chapters, the Indians continued their depredations causing much loss of life and property. From 1783 to 1790 about fifteen hundred people fell victims to their cruelty. There were no formidable war bands, but small parties skulked through the woods and pounced upon hunting parties and outlying settlements unawares, burning, murdering, and pillaging.

Expeditions Against the Indians.—In response to a petition to Congress from Virginia in 1786, the Ken-

¹In 1784, the pioneers of Tennessee attempted to set up an independent state to which they gave the name of Franklin. Much confusion and some bloodshed followed. A condition bordering on anarchy existed until 1796, when Tennessee was admitted into the Union. Doubtless the mistakes of the Tennesseans went far toward preventing their Kentucky neighbors from making similar blunders.

tuckians were granted the privilege of protecting themselves from the Indians. Accordingly, General George Rogers Clark collected an army of a thousand men near Louisville to march against the Wabash tribes, while Colonel Benjamin Logan proceeded against Shawnee towns in Ohio, with about five hundred Kentucky volunteers. The boats dispatched by General Clark to convey provisions and ammunition up the Wabash to Vincennes were delayed by low water and most of the provisions were spoiled. Some of the officers refused to obey orders and many of the volunteers became mutinous and returned home. Wounded by the neglect of Virginia to properly recognize his services, pursued by creditors for debts his government should have paid, and weakened by intemperance, the grand old General lost much of the power he once possessed, and consequently lost control of his army.¹

Logan's Victory.—The failure of Clark's expedition was, in part, offset by the expedition led by Logan against the Shawnee towns on Mad River. Logan marched rapidly against these towns, which had been weakened by the absence of most of the warriors who had gone against Clark. He killed many of the Indians, took numerous prisoners, burned their cabins, destroyed their provisions and returned in twenty days.

Dr. Connolly.—By 1788 the sentiment against a violent separation of the State from Virginia had so developed that all intrigues and intriguers came under

¹ A full and interesting account of this expedition is given in Mann Butler's "History of Kentucky," Chapter IX.

dangerous suspicion. About this time Dr. John Connolly, a British agent, appeared in Kentucky for the announced purpose of looking after some land claims of which he said he had been deprived because he was a Tory. These lands had been surveyed for him near Louisville in 1773. In fact, however, Connolly's mission was to induce Kentucky to separate from the Union and place herself under the protection of Great Britain. He visited many prominent men of Kentucky and talked with them but met with no encouragement. When the object of his visit became known, many threats were made against him, and he made haste to leave the State to avoid the rough vengeance of the backwoods patriots.

The Political Club.—Indian depredations, politics and river commerce were the chief topics of the day. These and other important questions were ably debated by the Danville "Political Club" during the years of its existence from 1786 to 1790. Many of the ablest citizens of the Kentucky District belonged to this club, and a record of the proceedings, which has been preserved, proves that its members were a far-sighted people of superior ability. Through its influence much good was accomplished. It helped to inform the people, and thereby aided the State in obtaining its independence and its peaceable admission into the Union.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What was the attitude of Britain, France and Spain to Kentucky following the Revolution? In what ways did Kentucky assist in the

War of Independence? Give an account of the Battle of King's Mountain. Show how the action of Kentucky affected for all future time the development of the West. Give an account of General James Wilkinson. Tell about the first Kentucky newspaper. Describe the Indian troubles of this time. Give a sketch of Dr. John Connolly.

CHAPTER XXII

A REVIEW OF TEN YEARS

Death of Floyd.—By an act of the Virginia legislature in 1783, Jefferson, Fayette, and Lincoln Counties were formed into the Kentucky District, and a district court was organized. John Floyd, Samuel McDowell,¹ and George Muter were appointed judges, and Walker Daniel, attorney general. Shortly after his appointment, Floyd, who had distinguished himself as a fearless Indian fighter, and whose name, like that of Clark's, struck terror to the savages, was killed by Indians. He and his brother were riding unguardedly through the woods in a time of supposed peace when they were fired on, and Colonel Floyd was mortally

¹ Judge Samuel McDowell was born of Scotch-Irish parents, and came to Kentucky from Virginia in 1784. He served in the French and Indian War and had been awarded a large tract of land in Kentucky for his services. He was a Revolutionary Colonel and had an important part in the battle of Guilford Courthouse. He was one of the judges in the first district court held in Kentucky and presided over all the conventions for the admission of Kentucky into the Union. He was appointed by President Washington United States judge for the State of Kentucky. He died in 1817. He left distinguished descendants, among them his son, Dr. Ephraim McDowell, who was a pioneer in the field of surgery.

wounded. That two other members of this district court should meet a similar fate will convey to the mind of the reader some idea of the perils that still beset pioneer life.

Other Towns Founded.—The first court was opened at a church six miles from Harrodsburg, and one of its first acts was to order a log court house and jail to be built on the Wilderness Road about ten miles from Harrodsburg on what is now the present site of Danville. This town was named for Walker Daniel, who laid it out in 1781. It was favorably located in the Blue Grass Region and became the popular meeting place of many early conventions. By acts of the Virginia legislature, Bardstown was established in 1788, and Paris in 1789; the latter was settled in 1776 as Houston's Station, and for a time was called Hopewell.

More Immigrants Arrive.—Broadhead's Store.—Immediately following the close of the Revolution, streams of immigrants came over the Wilderness Road with trains of pack-horses bearing their meager supplies. Flatboats laden with merchandise and parties of home seekers and fortune hunters were constantly landing at Maysville and Louisville. These gave new hope to the settlers, and added more comfort and security to their harsh surroundings. About this time Daniel Broadhead, an officer of the Revolution, opened a store at Louisville where many kinds of goods were sold. Woven cloth, calicoes, sunbonnets, and even silks and broadcloths, parasols, and other costly articles that had been brought from Philadelphia, found a ready market among the pioneers.

John Filson, a schoolmaster, came to Kentucky from Pennsylvania about 1782. Like most of the early pioneers, he had been lured to the State by the fame of the beautiful country, its delightful climate, and fertile soil. He was well educated, fond of roaming,



JOHN FILSON
Kentucky's First Historian.

and, as some of the old pioneers said of him, "could ask more questions than everybody and answer fewer than anybody." He studied the wild landscapes and the rivers which flowed through them, and made note of all he saw and heard. Finally, in 1784, he published the first history of Kentucky and a map of the territory. He tells of "The Adventures of Colonel Boone," as narrated by the old pioneer himself, though in his own florid and

exaggerated style. His little book made a picture-land and paradise of Kentucky, and it doubtless influenced many an eastern reader to move into the wilderness. Immediately after its publication it was translated into French by M. Parraud and published in Paris. In partnership with Robert Patterson and Matthias Denman he laid off a town on the present site of Cincinnati to which was given the fanciful name of Losantiville—the city opposite the Licking. About this time, 1788, while out surveying he became separated from the rest

of the party and was never seen again. He was probably killed or captured by the Indians. The Filson Club of Louisville, the leading historical club of the State, is named in his honor.

Inventions.—As soon as the bold energy of the pioneers was relieved from battling against the forest and its inhabitants, it naturally turned to the arts of peace. From the beginning, the many navigable streams had been used as highways, and it was but natural for inventive minds to seek easier methods of propelling the heavier craft against the swift currents. John Fitch, James Rumsey, and Edward West were three of the earliest inventors of steamboats. John Fitch was born in Connecticut and came to Kentucky about 1778. One day, while watching the swift current of the Ohio River, he was impressed with the idea of an invention that would lead to a better mode of navigation. “He retired to his surveyor’s camp, to *think*; remembering that Watt in England was propelling mills by steam, he concluded that he could propel boats by the same power.” Notwithstanding the lack of sufficient money and material, Fitch built several boats which had temporary success, making a speed of four to seven miles an hour. But the machinery and boilers were too light and his boats broke down. After appealing in vain to his friends and finally to several governments, he became discouraged and abandoned his plans. He wrote and sealed up some manuscripts on mechanics; these were to be opened thirty years after his death. When opened, they told the sad story of his struggles and disappointments, and predicted that “The day will come when some more powerful man will get fame and

riches from my invention; but nobody will believe that *poor* John Fitch can do anything worthy of attention.” His prophecy came true. In less than thirty years many steamboats were plowing the streams he had navigated in an Indian canoe. In 1813, when Fulton sought to enforce his claim as inventor of the steamboat, a committee of the New York legislature decided “that the boats built by Livingston and Fulton were in substance the invention patented to John Fitch in 1791.” Fitch sought the aid of his government, then of England, France, and Spain, but it was all in vain. He became discouraged and retired to his land on Cox’s creek in Nelson County, where he spent his remaining years trying to drown his despair in drink. He died in Bardstown in 1798.¹

Other Inventors.—At the same time that Fitch was at work on his invention, James Rumsey, a Virginian, who afterwards moved to Kentucky, was also working on a steamboat model. Fitch and Rumsey both exhibited their plans to General Washington in 1784. A violent dispute arose between the two inventors as to who was first to apply steam in the driving of boats. Certain it is that they worked out the same idea about the same time, neither knowing anything of the plans of the other. It remained for Edward West, another Virginian, who moved to Kentucky about 1788, to make the first steamboat to navigate Kentucky waters. In 1794, in the presence of many people, he launched his model on a branch of the Elkhorn River. To the delight and wonder of all it moved rapidly through the water. West was a man of much inventive genius. He

¹ For fuller account see Collins’ “History of Kentucky,” II, p. 648.

was a watchmaker and gunsmith, but turned his inventive talent in many directions. He was awarded patents on his steamboat, a gunlock, and a nail cutting and nail heading machine—the first ever invented.¹ As a result of his enterprise, Lexington, his resident city, exported nails to Cincinnati, Pittsburg, and other cities. He died in Lexington in 1827, after a long and useful life spent in the service of the state of his adoption.

Pioneer Life Not Favorable to the Arts.—However, pioneer life is not favorable to the arts and literary pursuits. The people were eager for land, besides they had to snatch a living from their harsh surroundings while battling against the savages. Even poor John Fitch, notwithstanding his zeal for invention, took up a thousand acres of land in Nelson County. As mentioned elsewhere, most of the Kentucky settlers were descendants of the rural people of England, and true to their Anglo-Saxon habits they kept their faces set westward as colonizers. In Kentucky, they refused to live in villages, but in defiance of danger they scattered into the wilderness to settle. Even during the time when their mother states were engaged in a life-and-death struggle with England, they streamed over the mountains in mad haste to possess the land. A few came in a spirit of adventure, some for the sport and profit in hunting, none in search of *gold*, but nearly all to satisfy a traditional thirst for land. In time, this same spirit drove the Kentuckians still farther westward and made them colonizers of other states. Most of those who were left behind were land holders.

¹ Collins, Vol. II, p. 174.

Though the oldest state west of the Alleghenies, Kentucky has been outstripped by her sister states of the West in commerce and manufacture. Had a different class of people, like the settlers of New England, occupied the territory, the numerous waterways, fine timber, abundant minerals and other natural resources would doubtless have developed a commercial and manufacturing people instead of agriculturists.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Sketch the lives of John Floyd and Samuel McDowell. When and where was the first court opened? What other towns were founded at this time? Who was John Filson? Tell about the early inventors in Kentucky. Why was pioneer life unfavorable to the arts? How did the restless spirit of the early settlers affect the development of the State?

CHAPTER XXIII

LATER BORDER TROUBLES

DEFEAT OF HARMAR AND ST. CLAIR ¹

THE first regular census of the Kentucky District was taken in 1790, showing a population of 73,677. When we consider the great distance of Kentucky from the eastern states, the many perils and hardships encountered by the pioneers, and the fact that the Revolutionary War was in progress during the first eight years after settlement, the growth in population is surprising. By the time of Kentucky's admission into the Union the population had probably increased to one hundred thousand. As observed elsewhere, many hundreds of Revolutionary soldiers came to the State after the close of the war. One historian estimates that at this time the population increased at the rate of about twelve thousand a year. The Ohio River had now become the favorite route to Kentucky, because it was more convenient for reaching the richest lands of the State. The Indians, observing the large parties floating down to Kentucky in their flat-bottomed boats, and the rapid settlement of their favorite hunting grounds, became more alarmed than ever. They now haunted the wooded shores of the Ohio and scarcely a boat escaped attack.

¹ See Chapter V, "Kentucky in the Nation's History," McElroy.

Hesitancy of the Government.—Many settlers had abandoned the forts, and pushed farther into the wilderness to erect their cabin homes. These became an easy prey to skulking bands of Indians. Complaints were made to the Federal Government, and assurance was given to the people that steps would be taken to protect them. The Government had endeavored to restrain the backwoodsmen from making an offensive warfare against the red men, and by presents, promises, and treaties had endeavored to purchase peace for them. These overtures had failed, and it now became the duty of the Government to protect the border people from increasing savage depredations. Indeed it must be remembered that the newly created Government did not understand the importance and future greatness of the West, therefore reluctantly consented to the invasion of the Indian country. The region east of the Alleghenies seemed ample for all time, and many statesmen did not believe in a westward expansion. These statesmen favored the Indians retaining their lands undisturbed, and indulged the hope of preserving and civilizing them. It was a vain hope, for the wild, independent red man of the forest refused, under the most favorable opportunities offered him, to accept civilized ways of thinking and living. His contempt for labor and humane laws that are necessary to civil progress are against the traditions handed down to him for thousands of years. Very few of the Indians of today have accepted the white man's civilization.

Harmer's Defeat.—But now the time had arrived for the regular troops of the National Government to take

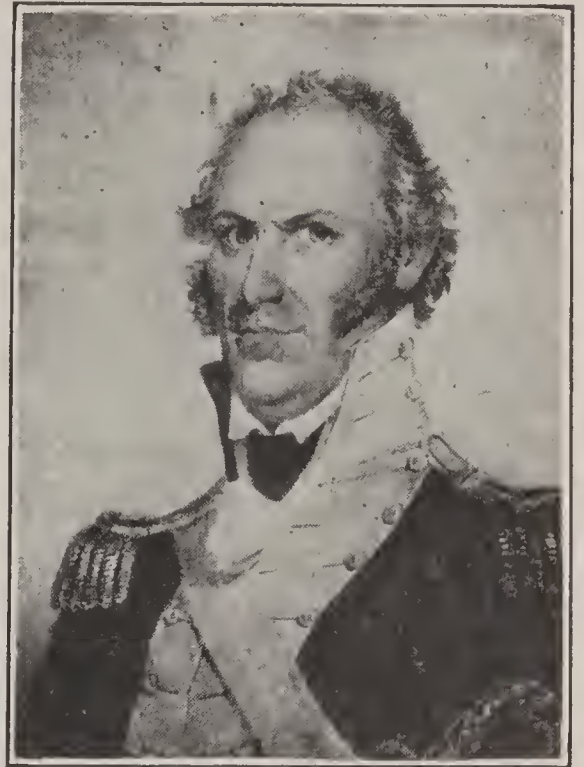
the chief part against the Indian tribes of the Northwest. That the regular officers and soldiers did not know how to meet their wily foe in a forest warfare is shown by the humiliating defeats that followed. The Federal Government placed General Josiah Harmar at the head of three hundred and twenty regulars and about eleven hundred volunteers. The army assembled at Fort Washington, now the site of Cincinnati, September 30, 1790, and from there slowly marched against the towns of the Miami Indians. Though Harmar was a gallant Revolutionary officer he was not a trained Indian fighter; besides, most of his army was undisciplined, disorderly, and inclined to rebel against authority. General Harmar yielded to the demands of the volunteers in placing Colonel Trotter, an incompetent officer, at their head. The army supplies were poorly managed; so, the badly organized expedition was doomed to failure from the start. On the 18th of October, Colonel Trotter with three hundred men was sent out to locate the Indians. After pursuing a small band and killing two he returned home. Greatly angered at Trotter's conduct, Harmar ordered Colonel John Hardin to take command of the volunteers and to lead some small detachments against the Indians. These were surprised by the savages and almost destroyed. The unruly militia lost confidence in their leaders and began to desert. Had Harmar kept his whole body of troops together and delivered a united attack against the Indians, this story of defeat might have been one of victory. After destroying some towns, crops, and provisions his army retreated. Instead of putting an end to savage at-

tacks, the tribes now banded together and became more troublesome than ever. Harmar's defeat aroused many criticisms against the Government, and even Knox, the Secretary of War, stated to the President that if the treaties were observed, and the Indians kindly treated and paid for their lands, they would become attached to the United States.¹ There were some statesmen who even recommended that the territory west of the Alleghenies be abandoned by the settlers. None seemed to fully grasp the meaning of the rapidly growing West and the early need of its vast stretches of woods and prairies to provide room for the onrushing tide of a coming Nation. While the Indian was often unjustly and cruelly treated, it is now easy to see that he never would have given up his lands without an appeal to arms.

The Local War Board.—The Kentuckians were the kinsmen of the eastern settlers and the blood-bond called for their protection however opposed to war the Government might have been. Chafing under the recollections of the cowardly conduct of their troops under Harmar, the Kentuckians determined to "wipe away the stain" by independent action against the Indians. Accordingly, a number of prominent citizens petitioned President Washington to appoint a local War Board to take charge of the defense of Kentucky. In response to this petition Congress appointed Isaac Shelby, Harry Innes, John Brown, and Benjamin Logan on this board and authorized it to make two expeditions against the Wabash tribes.

¹ Roosevelt, "The Winning of the West," Vol. V, p. 132.

Expedition Against the Wabash Tribes.—In the meantime, in spite of the protests of John Brown, Kentucky's only Congressional delegate, General Arthur St. Clair had been appointed commander of the United States army in the West. Brown declared that St. Clair's appointment would be offensive to the Kentucky people, not only because they mistrusted his military ability, but because he was known to have but little sympathy for the backwoodsmen. While General St. Clair was slowly organizing his proposed expedition against the Miami Indians, two expeditions were planned by the local War Board against the Wabash tribes. These expeditions were led by General Charles Scott and Colonel James Wilkinson, and were composed of mounted volunteers who were trained Indian fighters. In a short time they successfully attacked and defeated the Wabash tribes, burned their towns and destroyed their growing crops. Disheartened by these defeats, the Wabash Indians gave no aid to the Miami tribes when they were attacked later by the Americans under St. Clair.



GENERAL CHARLES SCOTT

St. Clair's Defeat.—St. Clair was an honorable man and a brave officer, but he was old, broken in health, and unfit for the responsibilities of a frightful border

warfare. His appointment so displeased the Kentuckians, who had learned to distrust the regular army officers, that none volunteered; consequently, about one thousand men were pressed into reluctant service. These were placed under the command of Colonel William Oldham, who led his sullen and unwilling band to Fort Washington, now the site of Cincinnati, to join St. Clair's regulars. St. Clair was not supported by the Government as he should have been. He had few regulars, the rest were untrained, dissatisfied and unruly militia. On October 1, 1791, the army, amounting now to about three thousand men, poorly organized, left Fort Washington and began its slow march through deep woods and over wet prairies. The progress of the army was slow and discouraging, and one band after another deserted, as opportunity offered. The Indians were well informed of the movements of the army and had ample time to prepare an attack. St. Clair had been warned by Washington against the chance of a surprise, but the General seemed ignorant of the dangers which surrounded him, else indifferent to them. On the morning of October 4, 1791, while the army, now reduced by desertion to about fourteen hundred men, was encamped on the eastern fork of the Wabash River it was suddenly attacked from all sides. A furious battle followed. The Indians poured into the crowded ranks of the Americans an incessant fire as they crept, unseen, closer and closer. Colonel Oldham was killed early in the action while bravely rallying his men. Chiefs and warriors of the Shawnees, Wyandots, Delawares, and Miamis, probably outnumbering the whites, fought with utmost cunning and

bravery. Although St. Clair stood his ground for some time and charged the enemy repeatedly, although he had his clothing pierced by many Indian bullets, a bloody defeat followed. General Thomas Butler, St. Clair's able second, was severely wounded early in the battle, but kept up the fight until he was killed. After two hours of desperate fighting the Americans broke into a wild panic, followed by the usual pursuit and savage slaughter. About seventy officers and seven hundred soldiers were killed or wounded.

A Bitter Lesson.—When Washington learned of St. Clair's defeat he exclaimed, "He went off with that last solemn warning thrown into his ears, and yet to suffer that army to be cut to pieces, hacked, butchered, tomahawked by a surprise, the very thing I guarded him against! O God, O God, he's worse than a murderer!" But finally calming himself, Washington remarked, "General St. Clair shall have justice . . . he shall have full justice." On account of his courage and high character, St. Clair was held guiltless by both Washington and Congress, though the President and Congress did not escape the censure of the people. It was a bitter lesson, but the disaster of Harmar and St. Clair had taught the Government at Washington the power of its western foes, and the necessity of selecting officers and soldiers, trained in Indian warfare, to overcome them.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

How do you explain the rapid increase in population in Kentucky at this time? How do you explain the weak and hesitating attitude of the National Government toward Kentucky? Give an account of Har-mar's defeat. Why was a Local War Board appointed? Give an account of St. Clair's expedition. Explain why these disasters occurred. How did President Washington regard St. Clair's defeat? What lesson did the Government learn?



THE FIRST SEAL OF KENTUCKY

PERIOD OF COMMONWEALTH

CHAPTER XXIV

SETTING UP THE STATE GOVERNMENT

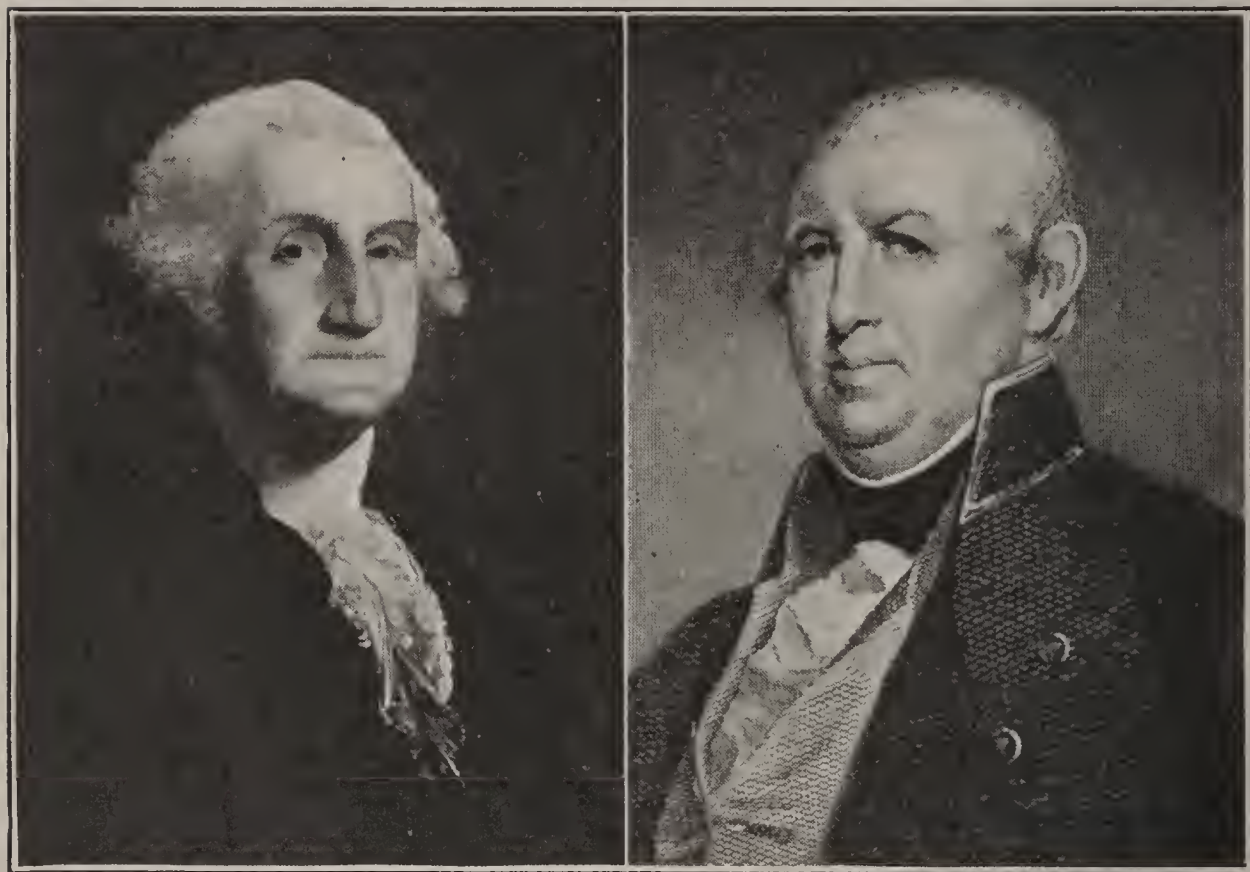
THE INDIANS SUBDUED

THE constitution which was framed by the tenth convention that met at Danville, April 19, 1792, was not submitted to the popular vote but it met with the general approval of the people. While it was modeled after the constitution of the United States, it followed the plan of a democracy rather than that of a republic. The rights of the individual, and the spirit of liberty were carefully safeguarded by many of its provisions. Like that of the United States Government it provided for three departments—legislative, executive and judicial.

Some Provisions of the Constitution.—The constitution required that the first meeting of the general assembly should be held at Lexington, June 4, 1792, for the purpose of organizing a state government, and the passing of state laws. It guaranteed suffrage to all white, male citizens, twenty-one years of age, who had not been deprived of the right by crime.¹ It also established *numbers* as a basis of representation. The

¹“This is probably the first experiment of manhood suffrage in any modern State.”—Shaler, “Kentucky,” p. 122.

governor and senators were chosen for four years by a college of electors. The representatives were elected for one year by the people. The judges of the supreme court and also those of the lower courts were nominated by the Senate and appointed by the governor, and held office during good behavior. Following an Eng-



GEORGE WASHINGTON
Our First President

ISAAC SHELBY
Kentucky's First Governor

lish custom, founded on prejudice, ministers of the gospel were not permitted to be members of the legislature. Commerce in slaves was prohibited, and it was recommended to the legislature that it pass laws permitting slaves to be freed, provided they should not become dependents on public charity. The supreme court was given original and final authority in

deciding all land cases. This was done in order to clear the land titles impartially, and to fix the boundaries of many conflicting claims. However, this provision was found too burdensome to be practical and was soon abandoned. Unfortunately, the constitution made no provision for a public school system, nor was there any made for many years afterward. This fact explains, in part, the reason that Kentucky has fallen behind many of its younger sister states in educational standing.

Immediately following the adoption of the constitution General Isaac Shelby, who had played an important part in the early struggles of the State, was elected governor. He had rendered a brave and signal service in the battle of Point Pleasant, and his courage and patriotism had been proven upon many battle fields of the Revolution. He had planned and helped to win the battle of King's Mountain, which was one of the most important and heroic actions in the War of Independence.¹ Shelby was as wise in council as he was brave in action, and his choice as the first governor of Kentucky was an honor and a blessing to the new State.

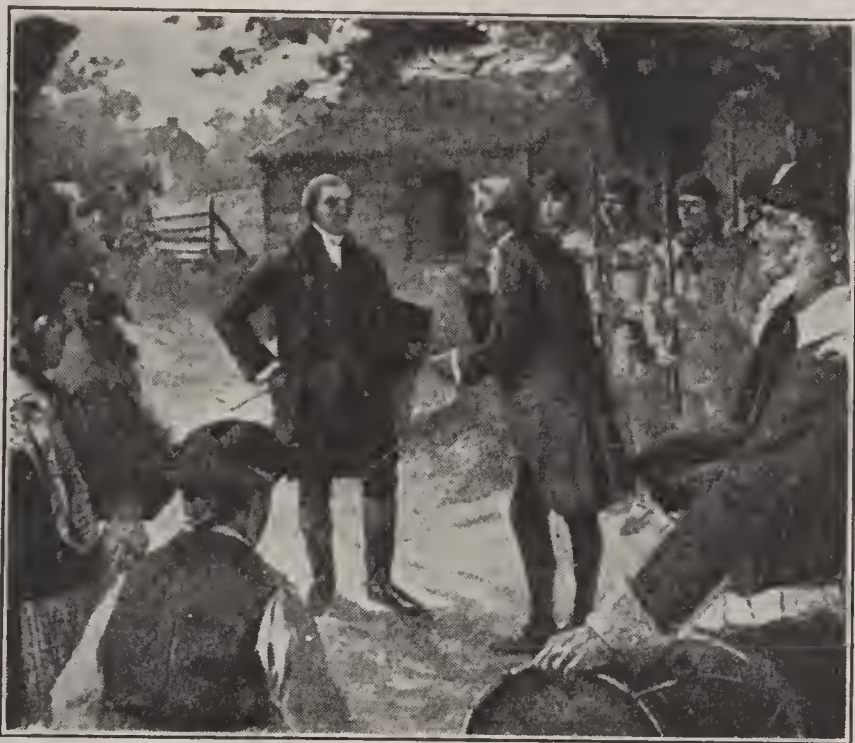
The governor, escorted by a troop of horsemen, reached Lexington, the first capitol of the State, June 4, 1792. He was received with all the pomp and military display the time and place could array. The people from other settlements crowded into the log-cabin town and thronged the unpaved streets, shouting a boisterous welcome to their first governor. The firing of cannon, the cracking of flint locks, and the beat-

¹ See footnote, p. 123.

ing of drums added their noisy celebration to the first inaugural ceremonies west of the Alleghenies. The years of impatient waiting for independent statehood were rewarded, and the time for the founding of their own government had arrived—their joy was unbounded. John Bradford, editor of the *Kentucky Gazette*, delivered the welcome address. After the oath of office was administered to the governor, he was escorted to his chamber in the Sheaf of Wheat Inn, with all the courtly display possible on a backwoods occasion. No prince ever came to his realm with more pride and honor than the new governor, who came to his log-built mansion; no people ever bestowed their confidence more worthily. The occasion presented many strange contrasts. The pioneer land holder, the uncouth backwoodsman, the lately arrived Revolutionary veteran, and the accomplished officer and statesman met upon newly settled soil amid the most primitive surroundings. Hunting shirts, buckskin breeches, and drab linsey-woolsey, contrasted strangely with broadcloth and many fabrics of gaudy colors—the fashions of the East and the rude arts of the West met in honor of the occasion. A single impulse had drawn together the extremes of civilization to celebrate the setting up of the government of a state but recently born out of the wilderness. Later in the day Governor Shelby appointed James Brown, Secretary of State, and George Nicholas, Attorney General.

The First Legislature.—On June 6, the legislature assembled. Alexander Scott Bullitt was chosen speaker for the Senate, and Robert Breckenridge speaker for

the House of Representatives. Much after the fashion of English Kings, the governor appeared in person at the door of the Senate chamber accompanied by his Secretary of State. The Speaker of the Senate met him at the door and conducted him to his seat. Then the governor addressed the two houses, gave each a



Copyrighted, Keystone.

INAUGURATION OF GOVERNOR SHELBY

copy of his address and retired, leaving the legislature to its work of enacting laws for the new State. The legislature elected John Brown and John Edwards to represent the new Commonwealth in the United States Senate, and the governor appointed George Muter, Chief Justice, and Caleb Wallace and Benjamin Sebastian, Associate Justices of the Court of Appeals.

By an act of the legislature December 20, 1792, the first seal of Kentucky was ordered "to be engraved with the device: Two friends embracing, with the name of the state over their heads, and round about them

the following motto, 'United we stand, divided we fall.' '' The necessities of these pioneer days had so welded together the interests and sympathies of the people that it was only natural that they should select such an appropriate device and motto.



THE HOLMES HOUSE

This house was erected by Andrew Holmes and occupied in 1793, as the second temporary State House. It was purchased from Holmes by General James Wilkinson, and he sold it to James Love who kept tavern there. The "Love House," as it became known,

. . . "was the mecca in that early day,
Of the wise and distinguished that journeyed this way."

In it was preached the first sermon in Frankfort. It was the headquarters of Aaron Burr when in Frankfort, and in a rear room of it were planned the details of his conspiracy. (See "Register, Kentucky Historical Society," Vol. 10, No. 30.)

A committee appointed by the legislature to locate a permanent capitol met December 5, and resolved that "Frankfort was the most proper place for the seat of government." This report was approved, and on December 22, 1792, the first legislature adjourned "to hold its next session in the house of Andrew Holmes at Frankfort on the Kentucky River." A new stone



FIRST PERMANENT STATE HOUSE

state house and a governor's mansion were erected at Frankfort and were occupied for the first time in November, 1794. This picturesque city has ever since remained the seat of the State Capitol.

The Indians Refuse to Make Treaty.—The expeditions of Harmar and St. Clair against the Indians having failed, the red men still remained unsubdued. Num-

erous small bands of prowling savages continued their murderous attacks upon outlying settlers. Two messengers, John Hardin, and Major Truman, who had been sent to seek a peace parley with the Indians in northwest Ohio, had been murdered. Many boats on the Ohio were attacked, and British agents were known to be furnishing the savages with guns and ammunition to carry on these depredations against the Americans. Smarting under the defeats they had suffered, and vexed by the impudence of the British in still holding many posts that should have been given up, the Kentuckians ceased to hope for peace by treaty and were now eager to make war upon their enemies.

“Mad Anthony” Wayne.—In the meantime, General Anthony Wayne, popularly called “Mad Anthony,” had succeeded St. Clair as commander of the army of the Northwest. He called on Kentucky for troops, but, owing to the lack of confidence in the regular army officers, none volunteered. Governor Shelby, therefore, ordered a draft of one thousand mounted militia, and placed them under the command of General Charles Scott. These joined General Wayne’s army about eighty miles north of Cincinnati, and began to prepare for the campaign. However, upon the approach of winter the regular troops went into winter quarters at Fort Greenville and the Kentucky militia was disbanded.

Wayne Marches Against the Indians.—Although the campaign against the red men was temporarily abandoned, Wayne had won the confidence of the Kentuckians, so that the following summer General Scott

readily raised sixteen hundred volunteers and joined Wayne at Fort Greenville. The regulars and militia now amounted to about three thousand men. The army took up its march toward Fort Recovery. Being warned by a worthless deserter by the name of Newman, the Indians fled to a point on the Miami River almost under the guns of a British Fort. Wayne advanced until near the Indians' retreat and built a fort which he named, in contempt for the British post, Fort Defiance. From Fort Defiance he sent peace proposals to the Indians, who asked for ten days to consider them, but knowing their tactics, Wayne did not wait but advanced rapidly and cautiously against them.

Battle of Fallen Timbers.—On August 20, 1794, the Americans came upon the enemy "posted in a thick brushwood encumbered with fallen timber, the effect of a hurricane." Here the advance guard was hurled back by a heavy fire from the hidden enemy. Wayne, however, was prepared for battle and skillfully planned the attack. His regulars charged the enemy with bayonets and the mounted backwoodsmen swiftly moved to surround him. In forty minutes the Indians were defeated and thrown into a mad rout. The Americans pursued them for several miles, killing and capturing many of them. Thus was won a decisive victory, appropriately called The Battle of Fallen Timbers. The American losses were thirty-three killed and one hundred wounded, but the losses of the enemy were much greater. Among the slain were eight Wyandot chiefs and a number of white men in British service. The battle greatly angered Major Campbell, who was in command of the British Fort, and he de-

manded of Wayne why the Americans should dare to encamp under the mouth of His Majesty's Cannon. Wayne replied "that the affair of yesterday might well inform him," and in return demanded why the British Fort had been erected on American territory. Happily, neither officer acted rashly, for both knew that an open breach now meant a bloody war. Wayne's army burned the Indian towns, and destroyed the crops for many miles around. The spirit of the red men was so completely broken that they soon sued for peace. It was the most important victory ever won over the Indians of the Northwest, "for it brought about the first lasting peace on the border, and put an end to the bloody turmoil of forty years' fighting. It was one of the most striking and weighty feats in the winning of the West."¹

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

When was the first State Constitution adopted? Mention some of its provision. Give an account of the inauguration of Governor Shelby. Tell about the meeting of the first Legislature. Describe the first seal of Kentucky. Give an account of Wayne's campaign against the Indians. Tell about the battle of Fallen Timbers. What does Mr. Roosevelt say concerning this battle?

¹ Roosevelt, "The Winning of the West," Vol. V, p. 219.

CHAPTER XXV

THE BIG SANDY VALLEY AND OTHER SETTLEMENTS

WE must now turn our attention to the development of other portions of Kentucky. Among the first sections of the State to be explored was the valley of the Big Sandy. The permanent settlement of this section was delayed many years because it was more rugged and difficult to reach than the fertile open stretches of the Blue Grass Region. Then too it lay nearer the Ohio and was under the sway of the warring Shawnee Indians until after Wayne's victory over the savages at Fallen Timbers, as narrated in the previous chapter. The all-conquering Anglo-Saxon people finally subdued the savage bands and entrenched themselves in these mountain valleys which they continue to hold to this day.

Anglo-Saxon Settlers.—Probably the purest Anglo-Saxon type found in America at the present time still lives in the mountain fastnesses of the eastern part of our State. The same mountains that have shut in this Anglo-American type of men have shut out, until recent years, many foreign races of a lower class. Many of the sayings, songs, manners and traditions of these early pioneers still remain. Shut in by the mountains, without connecting highways with other sections of the State, these people have not moved forward with the current of modern progress, conse-

quently have retained much of the civilization of a hundred years ago.

Mounds and Salt Licks.—The Mound Builders have left in this region the remains of many monuments and other earthworks which they used for burying grounds, fortifications, and ceremonial purposes. The numerous salt licks and fine feeding ground made it a favorite haunt of wild animals, and these attracted thither many Indian hunting parties.

First Explorers.—Probably the first white man to set foot in this region was Gabriel Arthur, who accompanied a hunting party of Cherokee Indians thither in 1674.¹ Dr. Thomas Walker entered Kentucky through Cumberland Gap in 1750, and explored a part of the Big Sandy Valley. He gave the name Louisa, now called Levisa, to the west fork of the Big Sandy.

George Washington the First Surveyor.—Recent researches of Dr. Jillson show that George Washington probably made the first land survey in this valley, which, perhaps, was also the first to be made in Kentucky. It is known that Washington was surveying land in this region between 1767-1770. A beginning corner stone, which marks one of these surveys, has the initials "G. W." marked on it.

Other Explorers.—Daniel Boone and a companion, William Hill, were snow-bound while on a hunting and exploring expedition on the headwaters of the Big Sandy in 1767-8, and spent the winter there. For-

¹ Mention has been made in Chapter IV of the probable visit of Gabriel Arthur to Kentucky. See "Register, Kentucky Historical Society," Vol. 20, No. 60, p. 232.

tunately they pitched their camp near a salt lick where animals came in abundance and were easily slain by the campers for food. Other hunting and exploring parties visited this region before the permanent settlement of Kentucky began. The red man used this valley as a war basis for attacking the outlying settlements of Virginia. Their depredations finally brought about Lord Dunmore's War, and the battle of Point Pleasant.

First Settlement.—In the fall and winter of 1787 and 1788, Matthias Harmon and about twenty companions erected a log fort which became known as Harmon's Station. This fort, which was the first English outpost in the Big Sandy Valley, was located just below the mouth of Johns Creek. Numerous Indian attacks caused this station to be abandoned in 1789, after which it was burned to the ground by the red men. Both the Indian and white man coveted this valley because of the abundance of game, and because it furnished a direct route to the Holston and Clinch River settlements in the southeast. Harmon's Station was rebuilt in 1790 and was never again abandoned.

Oldest Town.—John Spurlock built the first house, in 1791, where Prestonsburg now stands, and thus founded the oldest town on the Big Sandy River.¹ While the settlement of the Big Sandy Valley was delayed, and its development has been slow, its pure mountain streams, fertile valleys, and rich mineral wealth will probably make it one of the most populous and wealthy parts of the State.

¹ Jillson, "Register, Kentucky Historical Society," Vol. 20, No. 60, p. 241.

The Early Preacher.—Into this valley, as into other settled portions of the State, came the early Circuit



THE CIRCUIT RIDER

The pioneer circuit rider was the religious herald of the West

Riders of many denominations. Although rugged in manners and dress, the pioneers were deeply religious. The preacher was poorly paid but he lived with the people and received a warm welcome in every home. At first there were no church houses but every home was open for prayer meeting and preaching services. In fair weather, meetings were

held in pleasant, shady groves which “were God’s first temples.” The preacher’s outfit consisted of a good horse, saddle, bridle, and warm clothes. In his saddle-bags he usually carried a change of clothing, a small Bible and a hymn-book. He picked his way over rugged trails from settlement to settlement and took refuge in any cabin home where night or storm happened to overtake him. His plain, practical preaching was in keeping with the ideas of the pioneers, and did much to brighten and sweeten their harsh lives.

Other Settlements.—By 1795, settlements were springing up in every part of the State. Stations were built along the “Cumberland Trace,” which extended from Crab Orchard through southern Kentucky to Tennessee. (See map p. 60.) In 1780, Thomas Helm and others built three forts about one mile apart in Hardin County. The same year three stations were

established in Logan County, one of them on the present site of Russellville. Glover's Station, now Greensburg, was founded in 1780, and McFadden's Station, near Bowling Green, in Warren County, in 1785. A Blockhouse was built in Christian County in 1785, and the town of Hopkinsville was laid out in 1797. About the same year William Smithers, popularly called "Bill Smothers," made a settlement on the present site of Owensboro. Smithers was born on the border of Virginia near the Holston River. His father was killed by Indians when "Bill" was only twelve years of age, and his mother died shortly afterwards. Before dawn on the day following his mother's burial he went and stood by the graves of his parents and lifting his hand to heaven he made a vow to devote his life to the killing of Indians. He fulfilled his vow at every opportunity. He was with Isaac Shelby in the battle of King's Mountain. Shortly afterwards he married, and with his wife settled in Kentucky. About 1798 he built a cabin and hunter's lodge on the present site of Owensboro.

The eager pioneers pushed rapidly into the forests in search of favored places to build their houses. They sought fertile land and abundant game, and usually located their homes near good timber and pure springs. By 1790 log cabins of the bold settlers dotted the entire State. Notwithstanding the dangers from bands of prowling savages and the hardships of backwoods life, the conquest and settlement of Kentucky went rapidly on. Many miles of dark forests lay between the scattered cabins, but each settler, by reason

of his isolation, became the more heroic and self-reliant.¹

¹ The following letter written about this time, on a scrap of paper apparently torn from the lining of a box or trunk, will give the reader a personal and close-up view of the perils and manner of living in these pioneer days. The writer of the letter, Mrs. Daphne Tiller, and her husband, floated down Cumberland River from near Cumberland Gap to the Fort at Nashville. From thence they walked up "The Cumberland Trace" until they reached Warren County, Kentucky, where they settled on Gasper River.

"Gasper River, March 2, 1794.

"Dear Mammy:

King Fraser came to our cabin yesterday and staid all night with us. He brought us beet and onion seed and gave me a needle and some flax seed. We came here because Tolliver hired Sam to live on the Ball land and hold it. One of our horses died at Cumberland Gap, and Sam sold the other to a man for some ammunition and food, and we made a boat and came down the river to the Fort and then walked here and put up a log cabin. We rowed down the river in the night and laid by in the day, and we walked three or four nights pretty near all night. We hear Mr. Tolliver is going to send some people out here, and I wish that he would, as it is lonesome when Sam is gone.

We have about two or three acres cleared and planted in corn and pumpkins and we have enough venison dried to last for a year. My yellow linsey dress is nearly worn out, but the cottonade is not. Sam made me a buck-skin apron.

There are folks about twelve miles from us on Big Barren River, and a Mr. McFadden who was hunting stray horses, stayed all night with us about a month ago. He begged us to come up where he lived and said it was not safe for us here. But we don't feel afraid if it was not so lonesome. King said that he was going to meet some surveyors and hunt for some military land.

Sometimes I cry about losing Bounce but Sam says that he knows that the Ingin that stuck a tomahawk into Bounce won't ever kill another dog for he put a bullet into his hide. They were here about one whole day, whooping and hollering about, but they were great cowards.

Sam says that if Tolliver will come out here next year we will go back on a visit. Tell everybody howdy and if you see any one coming here write to me and send me some things. I can get them at McFadden's.

Your affectionate daughter,

DAPHNE"

Out of such fiery trials, so simply described in the letter quoted in the footnote, was born the sturdy race of Kentuckians of a later day.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Where is the Big Sandy Valley? Why was its settlement delayed? What class of people mostly settled it? Who were the first white men to visit it? Where was the first settlement made? Describe the life of the pioneer preacher. Tell about other settlements made in the State. Read the letter in the footnote. It gives a good view of pioneer life.

CHAPTER XXVI

A POLITICAL CRISIS

THE FRENCH INTRIGUE AND GENET ENTERPRISE

THERE are critical periods in the life of every nation when an ill-advised act may change its destiny. The trying days of the Revolution had passed, a loose confederation of states had given place to a strong central government, and our infant Republic gave promise of future greatness. But it was yet young and untried and had not won the confidence of its own people and that of other nations that it now has. Each of the states that were then under our national banner had been but recently an independent colony and had reluctantly consented to unite under a stronger central government. The spirit of individual independence and state sovereignty was dear to the hearts of all Americans, especially to the western people.

There had not yet been sufficient time to bring them all together in a bond of national unity and sympathy. If the student will keep in mind these facts they will help him to understand the seeming disloyalty of the Kentuckians to the United States in the French intrigue.

Sympathy of the Americans for France.—The success of the American Revolution had fired the oppressed people of France with a desire for freedom. The French soldiers who had fought side by side with the Americans for their independence had scarcely returned to their native shores when the storm of the French Revolution broke. It was but natural that the Americans should desire to aid the French in their struggle for independence. The French people at first succeeded in limiting the power of their king and establishing a more liberal government without bloodshed, but the monarchs of Europe became alarmed at the growth of free governments and banded together to restore the King of France to absolute power. This brought on a bloody war. France at once turned to America for aid and sympathy and reminded us that, according to the recent treaty with her, we should become her ally. In the bloody conflict that followed the King of France was overthrown and beheaded and a republic was proclaimed.

Citizen Genet.—In 1793, the new French Republic sent its first minister, Edmund Charles Genet, to this country. He landed at Charleston and proceeded overland to Philadelphia amid a clamorous welcome of the people. He bore the title of "Citizen," for the French had abolished all titles of royalty, and all

persons were now known as "citizens." Genet had begun fitting out privateers and organizing "Democratic Clubs" in the interest of his country even before he called on President Washington at the Capitol. But the enthusiasm with which he was received by the people was chilled by the attitude of Washington, who assured him of the friendly feeling of the Americans, but informed him that the United States would not make an unprovoked war against a friendly nation. However, emboldened by the enthusiastic support of the people, Genet proceeded, in the face of the warnings of Washington, to appoint agents to organize expeditions against the enemies of France. Many of these agents were actively engaged in stirring up the people of Kentucky against Spain, which was now in alliance with England against France.

Attitude of the Kentuckians.—The West was ripe for Genet's intrigues, a fact well known to the "Citizen" Minister. England and Spain were both hated by the western people; the former, because of her tyrannical course toward the colonies, and the latter because she stood in the way of free navigation of the Mississippi, and the settlement of the Louisiana Territory. On the other hand, the French people were loved and admired because they had aided the Americans in the War of Independence and were now engaged in a similar struggle to throw off the yoke of a tyrannical monarch. While Kentucky had become a member of the Union, her people fretted under the seeming neglect of the Federal Government which they had not yet learned to respect or fear. They had been schooled in the freedom of border life and chafed

under any laws that limited their personal liberty, and, therefore, were slow to submit to the wishes of the Federal Government.

Genet's Backers Plan an Expedition.—Encouraged by these circumstances, Genet set on foot an expedition against Louisiana. It was to be composed of the frontiersmen, and to be led by George Rogers Clark. Neither Virginia nor the Federal Government had given proper recognition to the great work done by Clark in conquering the Northwest Territory, and this neglect had embittered him. With this strain upon his loyalty, and weakened by intemperate habits, he became an easy mark for the intriguing Genet, and declared that he desired to become, not only a soldier, but a citizen of France. “Genet’s agents and Clark in Kentucky actively undertook the procuring of supplies and boats, and attempted to interest the discontented Kentuckians in the scheme for securing the freedom of navigation of the Mississippi, by replacing Spain at the mouth of the river by the French Republic.”¹ Benjamin Logan, and many other Kentuckians who, Clark said, only waited for a proper time to openly declare themselves, were drawn into Genet’s enterprise. The agents of Clark and Genet gathered flatboats on the Ohio, and laid in stores of ammunition and provisions for the expedition. The preparations were made openly, and speedily attracted the attention of the Spanish agents, and alarmed the Government at Washington.

The Filibusters Are Warned.—“St. Clair, the Governor

¹“Report of American Historical Society,” 1896, p. 932.

of the Northwestern Territory, wrote to Shelby to warn him of what was being done, and Wayne, who was a much more formidable person than Shelby or Clark or any of their backers, took prompt steps to prevent the expedition from starting, by building a fort near the mouth of the Ohio, and ordering his lieutenants to hold themselves in readiness for any action he might direct."¹ Governor Shelby was likewise informed by Washington of the plans of the filibusters but he took no action, claiming he did not have a legal right to prevent the expedition.²

Failure of the Intrigue.—In the meantime, Washington had issued a proclamation of neutrality, and because of the ill-mannered and unlawful conduct of Genet, had requested the French Government to recall him. Even those who had supported Genet's plans were offended by the ill-advised actions of "such a feather-headed mischief maker," and had grown lukewarm toward his cause. Thus failed a project that involved great issues. A bloody war was averted at a critical time in our history, and the vast Mississippi Basin was left open to final and peaceable occupation by the United States. The people of Kentucky did not yet understand the strength and meaning of their union with the Eastern States, and the importance of the West in the future development of the Nation.

¹ Roosevelt, "The Winning of the West," Vol. VI, p. 97.

² In a letter to the Secretary of State, Shelby argued that he knew of no law to prevent the proposed expedition, or to inflict punishment on persons engaged in it. He declined to stretch his power to oppose the plans, for he believed the Government should act against Spain and protect the interests of the Kentuckians by securing the free navigation of the Mississippi.

While they were sincere and patriotic, they did not, as yet, have a true vision of their own good, and the future greatness of their country.

Washington and the West.—"Washington also saw, as we can see now very plainly, that, wrong and unpatriotic as the Kentucky attitude was, there was still an excuse for it. Those bold pioneers, to whom the country owes so much, had very substantial grievances. They knew nothing of the laws of nations, and did not yet realize that they had a country and a nationality; but they had the instincts of all great conquering races. They looked upon the Mississippi and felt that it was of right theirs, and that it must belong to the vast empire which they were winning from the wilderness."¹ Washington seems to have understood the Kentucky people, and the need for the Mississippi and the territory of the great West, better than any statesman of his day. "The true and first mission of the American people was, in Washington's theory, the conquest of the continent which stretched away wild and silent behind them, for in that direction lay the sure road to national greatness. The first step was to bind by interest, trade, and habit of communication the Atlantic States with the settlements beyond the mountains, and for this he had planned canals and highways in the days of the Confederation."²

Washington's Policy.—Washington wanted time—time gained by peace—to bring together the people of the United States under a strong Central govern-

¹ Lodge, "George Washington," Vol. II, p. 160.

² *Ibid.*, p. 214.

ment. He opposed Genet's enterprise in the face of unjust criticisms and slander, and even threats of violence. He was charged with sympathizing with England and supporting royalty against the rights of the people. The wisdom of Washington and a few other far-seeing statesmen prevailed, while Clark and other leaders in the ill-starred enterprise doubtless repented their hasty and ill-advised action. Thus failed the designs of France to regain her foothold in America and to limit the westward march of the United States; thus time was gained to bring peaceably into the Union all the great West to the sea.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Why did the State hesitate to become a part of the Federal Government? What effect did the success of the American Revolution have upon the French people? What was the attitude of the American people toward the French in their struggle for independence? Give an account of Citizen Genet. What was the attitude of the Kentuckians to Genet's enterprise? Who were the filibusters and what did they propose to do? What action did President Washington take? Subject for class debate: Resolved that the Americans should have aided the French in their struggle for independence.

CHAPTER XXVII

CHARACTER, MANNERS AND CUSTOMS OF EARLY KENTUCKIANS

THE achievement of our national independence gave self-confidence and personal pride to every true American. The close of the Revolution was the signal to a waiting host to move forward. The vastness of the West and the lure of the wilderness appealed to the free man. Here, notwithstanding the widely different classes that now made up the settlers, there were no castes, but an equal opportunity was offered everyone. "Without social classes and wealth, democracy reigned supreme. The daily struggle for existence amid the dangers of the wilderness produced a race of men, sturdy in their self-reliance, self-respecting in their independence, quick to think, strong to act, and above all filled with the spirit of enterprise. Their remoteness from the aim of the law led them to frame laws for themselves, or to take the law into their own hands."¹ The hazards and hardships of pioneer life established a bond of union and mutual dependence too close for social distinctions. Many thousands of Revolutionary soldiers, and others who had lost their fortunes in the war, streamed through Cumberland Gap, or floated down the Ohio to found homes

¹ Semple, "American History and Its Geographic Conditions," p. 62.

in the new country. Among these were many skilled workmen and able professional men and statesmen, from the best families of the East, who became leaders in the development of the State.

Making Progress.—Numerous roads that made travel easier and safer and aided in the defense against the savages had been opened. They were rough, and led across unbridged streams at fords or ferries. There were no post offices, post roads or mail carriers, but every person coming to the State or going from it, and every traveler was a willing bearer of messages and letters for friends, or strangers. The many navigable streams formed a network of natural highways for all manner of crude craft, used in traffic and travel. "Flatboats" conveyed the products of the farm and home to the Spanish markets at Natchez, New Orleans and other points on the Mississippi River. The wilderness was rapidly disappearing. Buffalo, elk, deer and other large game had become scarce, and domestic animals were being raised to supply the food and clothing. Wild pastures and canebrakes gave place to cultivated fields and meadows. Some orchards, planted by the first settlers, were now bearing abundant fruit, and wild grapes, wild strawberries, blackberries, persimmons, haws and papaws were plentiful. The forests yielded a bountiful supply of delicious nuts of many varieties that furnished food for man and beast.

Rough log huts with dirt floors were giving place to better and more comfortable houses. The furniture of the cabins was simple, crude and "home-made," and very limited in quantity. The tables consisted of

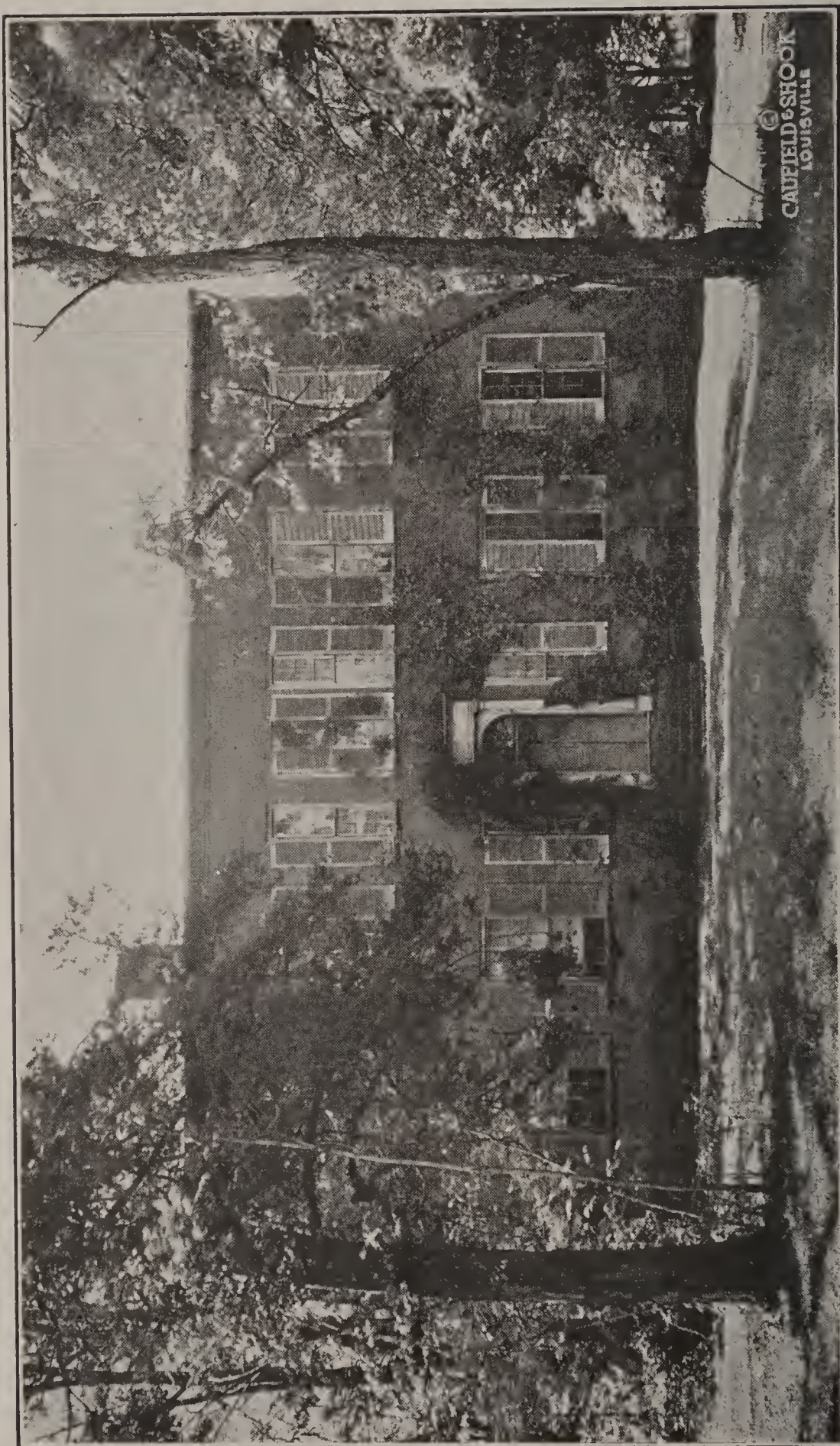
split logs hewn smooth on one side, with holes bored for legs, and stools of similar make were used for chairs. Beds were framed in the corners out of poles fitted into holes in the walls and resting on a corner support, consisting of a fork planted in the ground or set into a puncheon floor. The bedding consisted chiefly of buffalo, bear and deer skins and coarsely woven cloth.

Food.—A large open fireplace gave warmth and cheer, and upon the hearth about the fire, and in pots suspended from a rack in the chimney, the cooking was done. The food consisted of the meat of wild animals and fowls that were found in great abundance. Numerous creeks and rivers furnished a bountiful supply of savory fish that were easily caught. Corn furnished fodder for the animals, and roasting-ears, corn-pone and hominy for the family. Beans, potatoes, pumpkins, turnips and other vegetables produced well. Salt was scarce and the sweets consisted of sugar made from the sugar maple. “Hog and hominy,” “Jowl and turnip greens” became popular articles of food during these early years.

Fortress and Factory.—Over the door or fireplace, in a rack made of deer horns, lay the deadly rifle, and from the antlers the powder horn and shot pouch were suspended. Every home was a fortress and a factory and every man his own knight, carpenter and builder. As time went on, a division of labor came about and each settlement had its blacksmith, wheelwright and carpenter. The principal tools were the ax, saw, auger, adz, drawknife and hammer. The loom, spinning wheel, and other simple implements of domestic

arts, by which the shaggy hair of the buffalo and the fiber of the wild nettle were made into coarse cloth, were part of the household equipment. The clothing was made from dressed deer skins, coarse cotton goods, and linsey-woolsey, which was a coarse cloth made from flax and wool. "Every family was under the necessity of doing everything for themselves as well as they could." But this very necessity developed a strong and self-reliant people.

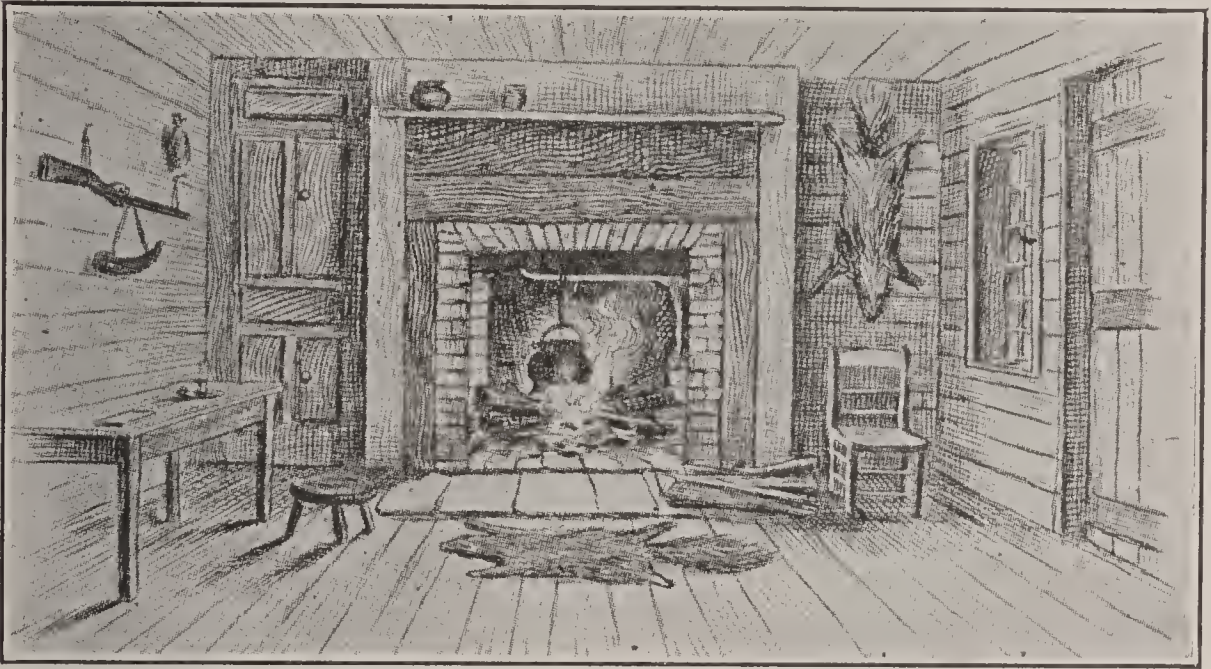
The Kentuckian was a freeman by birth and training, and rebelled against any abridgment of his personal liberties, but he was ardent in his support of the general good of his state. The price he paid in blood and suffering to found his home in the wilderness developed a fondness for his fireside and country, and made him a loyal and heroic defender of his government and its free institutions. The spirit of the "Old Kentucky Home," a song that has been sung around the world and translated into every civilized tongue, was developed in the Kentucky pioneers' cabins long before it was set to music. The hero of the wilderness defended his humble home with a courage and gallantry not surpassed by Sir Knight of feudal days in the defense of his castle—"My home," said he, "is my castle." Still, "The sun shines bright in the old Kentucky home" though so changed today from that of our forefathers. So long as the home and its virtues remain an abiding influence in our great Country, it will continue a tower of strength, and a beacon light to other nations. The hospitality of the homes of pioneer days has never been equalled in any other age or country. No man, even though a



FEDERAL HILL, BARDSTOWN,
Where Stephen Collins Foster wrote "Old Kentucky Home"

stranger, was turned from the door without a kind word or warm welcome. A rugged sense of law and order prevailed, and outlaw refugees from other states, horse thieves and robbers, the lawless of every kind, were treated with swift and certain punishment.

Pioneer Women.—Side by side with the brave men stood the pioneer mothers, wives, and daughters



AN IMPROVED PIONEER KITCHEN

who were equal sufferers and equally heroic in the face of dangers. They spun and wove, knitted and sewed, cooked, and worked the gardens to provide the household with food and clothing. Sometimes when left alone with the children in their cabins they were attacked by Indians whom they fought with courage and often succeeded in driving them off.¹ On occa-

¹ Shortly after the attack on Bryan's Station, Hosea and Jessie Cook, and Martin, a brother-in-law, settled on the Elk Horn near Frankfort. One day while two of the men were shearing sheep they were fired upon by the Indians. Both were killed but one got to the cabin door and was

sions when the forts were attacked, they aided the riflemen by molding bullets, loading the guns and putting out the fires which were sometimes started by flaming arrows shot by the enemy. They were the nurses and doctors, and with their simple remedies of herbs, teas and poultices, and the balm of their sympathetic tears, they relieved pain and saved lives.

Religion.—The pioneer minister who could fight as well as pray was popular with the early colonists. He preached a strong and fiery gospel concerning the wages of sin and the torments of the sinner, and performed an important part in suppressing wickedness and cheering the discouraged settlers. Baptists, Presbyterians, Methodists, Catholics and other denominations settled in Kentucky and with them came their ministers. There was at least one instance of a whole Baptist congregation that came from Virginia, preaching and praying on the way, finally settling and establishing a church in the State. Early Kentucky laws guaranteed religious freedom and, for the most part, the people were tolerant in their religious beliefs and practices. Many Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, who had strict notions concerning the observance of religious doctrines and the keeping of the commandments, were among the early Kentucky people. They favored schools and furnished many of the best pioneer teachers. With the pioneer

dragged inside by the women before he died. Unknown to the rest of the family, Jessie Cook had already been killed while out hunting. The Indians set fire to the building several times but the women put it out with water, and when this gave out they used the bloody shirt of the slain man, and broken eggs. They finally found bullets, loaded a rifle and fired on the Indians, killing the leader, when the rest fled.

preacher came the doctor and lawyer. The doctors carried their limited stock of medicines in saddlebags wherever they went, and when necessary, would ride night and day to relieve the sick. The lawyer found profitable practice in the courts in the settlements of much confusion concerning land claims.

Pioneers at Play.—In spite of the perils and hardships of these early years, the spirit of these dauntless heroes often broke forth in frolic and fun. To the music of the old-time fiddle, young and old alike joined in the popular jigs or the Virginia Reel, to while away many pleasant hours. The hardier sports of jumping and racing, boxing and wrestling, shooting matches, throwing the tomahawk, and even fighting were favorite pastimes of the men. The early Kentuckians showed their fondness for fine horses, and horse racing became popular at this time. They sometimes combined work and play. On the occasion of log-rollings, house-raisings, house-warmings, corn-shuckings, and quilt-ings they met to do what the family alone could not accomplish. “Every such meeting was the occasion of a frolic and dance for the young people, whiskey and rum being plentiful, and the host exerting his utmost power to spread the table with backwoods delicacies—bear meat and venison, vegetables from the ‘truck patch’ . . . wild fruits, bowls of milk and apple pies”¹—feasting and fun ruled the occasion.

Books.—There were but few books, but these were mostly of a moral and religious type, such as the Bible, Pilgrim’s Progress, Saint’s Rest, Paradise Lost, Plutarch’s Lives, Homer’s Iliad, and Shakespeare’s

¹Roosevelt, “The Winning of the West.”

Plays. It must be remembered that many of the pioneers were well educated people and it was not uncommon to find many of the best books of the day in some of these cabin homes.

Word Picture of Pioneer Home.—Alexis De Tocqueville, a French writer who traveled on the pioneer border of the United States in 1830, has drawn for us a true and thoughtful picture. He says, “As soon as the pioneer arrives on the spot which is to serve him for a retreat, he fells a few trees and builds a log house. Nothing can offer a more miserable aspect than these isolated dwellings. The traveler who approaches one of them toward nightfall, sees the flicker of the hearth-flame through the chinks in the walls; and at night, if the wind rises, he hears the roof of the boughs shake to and fro in the midst of the great forest trees. Who would not suppose that this poor hut is the asylum of rudeness and ignorance? Yet no sort of comparison can be drawn between the pioneer and the dwelling which shelters him. Everything about him is primitive and unformed, but he is himself the result of the labor and experience of eighteen centuries. He wears the dress and speaks the language of cities; he is acquainted with the past, curious of the future, and ready for argument upon the present; he is, in short, a highly civilized being, who consents, for a time, to inhabit the backwoods, and who penetrates into the wilds of a new world with the Bible, an ax and a file of newspapers.”

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What strengthened the bond of union and prevented castes among the settlers of the West? Tell about the roads, mail service, travel and traffic at this time. Describe the home and home life of the pioneer. Why was every home necessarily a fortress and a factory? What can you say concerning the spirit of the Old Kentucky Home? What did the pioneer women do? What can you say concerning the religious movement of this time? Tell about the pioneers at work and play. What does De Tocqueville say of the pioneer home?

CHAPTER XXVIII

POLITICAL BEGINNINGS

POLITICAL confusion followed the bloody days of the Revolution. Up to this time no strong state or national governments had been established. Following the conflicts of battle, came a conflict of principles in the setting up of a free government, different from any that existed at that time. Out of the theories and experiments of this time, and previous years of colonial experience, have come our present forms of state and national governments. The future welfare of our country depended upon the political movements of this time. Politics, which is the science and art of government, rightly demanded the attention of the people. Since Kentucky had become a member of the Union, she was concerned not only in the setting up of a good state government, but in all national questions that had to do with her rights as a State. Different political ideals gave rise to different political parties.

Rise of Political Parties.—How to build a strong central government out of many independent state governments, without interfering with the rights of either, was a difficult problem that took many years to solve. Out of the ideals of this time two political parties sprang. These were the Federalist, now called the Republican party, and the Republicans, now called the Democratic party. Each desired good government, but the Federalists thought there should be a strong National Government and less state rights; the Republicans wished to give the states more power and the Federal Government as little power as possible. In short, the Federalists believed in a strong central government while the Republicans believed in a strong state government. These different ideas of government became the source of much bitter controversy and was one of the causes that finally led to the Civil War.¹

Jay's Treaty.—To rightly understand the history of our State it will be necessary, henceforward, for us to study many national questions. Washington, who was a Federalist, was unanimously re-elected President in 1793. In 1794, he appointed John Jay, envoy to England, to make a treaty concerning the posts still

¹ From 1826 to 1856 the Federalists were called the National Republicans, or, sometimes, Whigs. About 1856 the name was changed to Republicans, which title has been kept till now. In 1828 the Republicans, or Anti-Federalists, were called Democratic Republicans, but since 1830 they have gone by the name of Democrats. Whigs, as opposed to Tories, were supporters of the Revolution, and afterwards supporters of the National Government. This party was formed in 1834 by a fusion of the National Republicans and other elements opposed to the Democrats. The Whigs elected Harrison in 1840, Taylor in 1848, and disappeared as a party by 1856.

held by the British in the Northwest, and to establish more just and honorable commercial relations. It will be recalled that in 1785, Jay had offered to give to Spain control over the navigation of the Mississippi River for twenty-five years. Remembering this, the Kentuckians were greatly angered by Jay's appointment, for they believed that if he would barter away their "natural" rights "to the free and undisturbed navigation of the Mississippi River" to Spain, that he would not protect their interests in a treaty with England. At a public meeting held in Lexington, resolutions were drawn up strongly condemning Jay and the policy of the Federal Government. Jay was guillotined and burned in effigy. These insults were heaped upon the able envoy before he had been given time to reach England. These acts were unworthy of the Kentuckians and can be understood only by remembering their hatred for England and Spain, both of which had stood in the way of their liberty and progress. The Kentuckians called loudly for a redress of "injuries and insults done and offered by Great Britain to America," and promised their support to the utmost of their ability. Fortunately a wiser course was pursued by the Federal Government. A treaty was made by Jay in 1795, and ratified by the United States. It was not what the people desired, and when published, it provoked much angry criticism, but it was better than war. It provided for the surrender of the Northwest posts by 1796, and allowed more freedom of trade with England, but said nothing about the payment for ships that had been unlawfully seized by the British. "The indignation of the Ken-

tuckians almost amounted to mania. They denounced the treaty with frantic intemperance, and even threatened violence to those of their own number, headed by Humphrey Marshall, who supported it; yet they benefited much by it, for it got them what they would have been absolutely powerless to obtain for themselves, that is, the possession of the British posts on the Lakes."¹ In May, 1796, these posts were evacuated, and thus the Kentucky people were relieved from the presence of a hated enemy.

Separatists' Movement.—Spain secretly desired the separation of Kentucky from the Union. Knowing the dissatisfaction of the Kentuckians with the policy of the Federal Government, the Spanish Governor of New Orleans sent Thomas Power to parley with the leaders who favored separation. Power promised them armed aid if they would revolt, also that Spain would become an ally of the State when her independence had been secured. The Spanish Government was a weak and treacherous power and attempted to do by treachery and intrigue what it feared to attempt openly. Notwithstanding rich bribes that were offered to the leaders of the separatists, these men refused the offer and kept the knowledge of it from the people. The leaders of the separatists never actually carried the Kentuckians with them; for, whenever an issue was sprung, the people proved loyal to the Union. Happily, in 1795, Thomas Pinckney wrung from Spain a treaty that fixed the boundary line between the United States and Spain, as claimed by the United

¹ Roosevelt, "The Winning of the West," Vol. VI, p. 115.

States, and opened the Mississippi to free navigation.¹ The combined effect of Jay's and Pinckney's treaties gave much satisfaction to the West and resulted in its greater loyalty to the Federal Government.

Governor Garrard's Administration.—In 1796, James Garrard, a Revolutionary officer who had also served in the Virginia and Kentucky legislatures, was chosen second Governor of Kentucky and was re-elected in 1800. At this time money was scarce, and most of the trading was by barter. Butter was eight cents a pound, beef two cents, buffalo meat one and one-half cents, and fat turkeys only twenty cents apiece. Manufactured articles were scarce, and luxuries could be had only by the well-to-do. The salaries of officers were low. The Governor received one thousand dollars, while the Judges of the Court of Appeals received two-thirds, and the Auditor and Attorney General one-third of that amount. Salaries of other officials were correspondingly low.

Agitation of the Slave Question.—The slave question was now attracting the attention of our state and national governments. There was much opposition to slavery in Kentucky. A provision of the State Constitution prohibited the bringing of slaves into the State as merchandise. As early as 1798, Henry Clay, a young Virginian, who had recently come to Kentucky, spoke eloquently against slavery, and favored a plan by which all slaves would be gradually freed.

¹ The southern boundary, as agreed upon, ran with the thirty-first parallel of latitude from the Mississippi to the Chattahoochee, down it to the Flint, thence to the head of St. Mary's, and down it to the sea. (Trace on a map.) The mid-channel of the Mississippi had been declared the western boundary.

As time went on the slave question became the source of much bitter controversy, and finally led to our great Civil War.

Spanish Intrigue.—The interval of peace which had reigned since the Jay Treaty was now rudely broken. Spain, acting in her usual bad faith, refused to carry out the treaty she had ratified in 1796. Again she sent Thomas Power to confer with Wilkinson, Sebastian, Innes, and others in another effort to bring about a separation of the West from the States of the East. Spain continued her schemes and delays, but the western people could not be restrained much longer. The settlers around Natchez and other places, still held by the Spanish in violation of the treaty, arose in revolt. Finally, Captain Isaac Guyon, with a troop of United States soldiers, took possession of Chickasaw Bluffs and Natchez, and the Spanish soon evacuated the country. Spain ultimately yielded because she feared to hazard a conflict with the Americans that would probably involve the entire loss of Louisiana.

The Alien and Sedition Laws.—In 1798, party lines were sharply drawn. The Federalists, led by Alexander Hamilton, stood for a strong centralized government; the Republicans, led by Thomas Jefferson, advocated State's Rights and local self-government. Hamilton did not believe the people capable of self-government; Jefferson trusted the people, and believed they would rule wisely and well. We should bear in mind the difference in these political doctrines in the issue that arose at this time. John Adams, a Federalist, was now President of the United States.

There were a number of enemies to our Government, many of them foreigners, who viciously attacked our institutions. The insolent conduct of Citizen Genet was also recalled and it added to the resentment against foreigners. In the excitement, Congress, which was controlled by the Federalists, passed the "Alien and Sedition Laws." The Sedition Law made it a crime for anyone to speak ill of the President or of Congress in a way to arouse the hatred of the people against them. Those who opposed these laws said they were an attack on the freedom of speech and the liberty of the press. They kindled a flame of indignation in the hearts of the western people, and popular clamor arose against the Federalist Party, which had passed them. The Kentuckians, as well as the people of other states of the Union, had fought for liberty, for freedom of speech, and for self-government, and refused now to obey any law that took these rights from them. At a meeting held in Lexington young Henry Clay poured forth such a torrent of eloquent denunciation of the laws that "indignation came like a dark shadow upon every countenance" present.

The Kentucky Resolutions.—Soon after this the Kentucky legislature passed Resolutions severely condemning the Alien and Sedition Laws, declaring they violated the Federal Constitution; and were, therefore, "altogether void and of no effect."¹ Thomas Jefferson had written the Resolutions, but some changes were made in them by John Breckenridge be-

¹ For a full and interesting account, see McElroy, "Kentucky In the Nation's History," Chapter VIII.

fore he introduced them, and secured their adoption. A few weeks later, Virginia adopted similar resolutions, and other states were called upon to express themselves upon the question. A few did, but took an opposite view from Kentucky and Virginia. Thus a grave question was opened that became the source of strife for many years, and was also one of the causes of the Civil War. The Alien Law was never enforced. The first victim of the Sedition Law was Matthew Lyon, a member of the House of Representatives from Vermont.¹ The Kentucky Resolutions attracted wide attention and became famous in American history. The passage of the unpopular Alien and Sedition Laws by the Federalist President and

¹ Matthew Lyon was born in Ireland in 1746. At nineteen years of age he fled to America to escape the cruelty of a step-father. He bound himself to a ship captain to work twelve months for his passage. Upon reaching America, the captain hired him to a Connecticut farmer for two bulls. He served the farmer faithfully for one year and became a free man. From this circumstance he adopted for his favorite byword, "by the bulls that bought me." Lyon became a Colonel of militia in the Revolutionary army. He was a restless, daring, and impetuous spirit, ultra-democratic. In 1797 he was sent to Congress from the State of his adoption. While in Congress he had a personal encounter with Mr. Griswold, a Federalist, who hated him. For a violation of the Sedition Law he was fined and thrown into prison for language used against President Adams and the Federalists, that would be considered mild in the heat of modern political campaigns. While serving his sentence in prison he was re-elected to Congress. In 1801 he cast the deciding vote in the election contest that made Thomas Jefferson instead of Aaron Burr President of the United States. In the spring of the same year he moved to Kentucky with his family and some friends and founded Eddyville. From Kentucky he was sent to Congress for eight years. Lyon County was named for his distinguished son, Colonel Chittenden Lyon. Be it said to the honor of our great country that a later Congress returned the amount of the fines, with interest, to the descendants of Matthew Lyon. (See sketch, Collins' "History of Kentucky, Vol. II, p. 491.)

Congress proved the undoing of the Federalist Party, and brought about the election of Thomas Jefferson in 1800.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Why was there confusion in the setting up of a new form of government in America? Give an account of the rise of political parties. Why did the Kentuckians resent the appointment of John Jay as envoy to England? How did they show this resentment? How did Jay's treaty benefit Kentucky? Describe the Spanish intrigue and the separatists' movement. Tell about the price of foodstuffs at this time. What was the result of the second Spanish intrigue? What were the Alien and Sedition laws? How were they regarded in Kentucky? What were the Kentucky Resolutions?

CHAPTER XXIX

POLITICAL MOVEMENTS AND WESTWARD EXPANSION

Second Constitutional Convention.—To understand many of the public acts of the Kentuckians, the reader must always keep in mind their love of personal independence. They rebelled against any authority that threatened their individual and political liberty. The passage of the Alien and Sedition Laws turned their attention to their own Constitution and caused them to demand a revision of it. Accordingly, a second constitutional convention met in Frankfort July 22, 1799. Alexander Scott Bullitt was chosen president, and Thomas Todd, clerk. The revisions that were made required the Governor to be elected by the people in-

stead of by a college of electors. It limited his authority, and provided that his veto power might be overruled by a majority of the legislature. It further provided for a Lieutenant Governor, also to be elected by the people, and that he should be speaker of the Senate. The Senators were to be chosen by popular vote, and much of the business of the Supreme Court was delegated to lower courts that were more ac-



AN OHIO RIVER FLATBOAT

cessible to the people. These and other acts show that the people were jealously guarding their right to self-government.

Trade Development.—Following the treaty with Spain in 1795, which provided for the free navigation of the Mississippi, and the right to deposit goods at New Orleans for reshipment to foreign markets, trade between Kentucky and the southern ports grew rapidly. On account of a scarcity of money, Governor Garrard encouraged the Kentucky merchants to make “an exchange of commodities” when trading in southern markets. The Ohio and Mississippi and many of their

tributaries were now dotted with flatboats, keel-boats and all manner of crude craft on their way to southern markets. Farming became more profitable and land rose in value. The people were becoming more contented and prosperous. But their joy was of short duration, for other foreign troubles arose that interfered with their commerce.

Enemies to Our Trade.—France became bitterly angry at the Jay Treaty made with her enemy, England. She charged the United States with bad faith, and insultingly refused to receive Pinckney, our minister, who was sent to Paris. She sent Pinckney home and began to prey upon our commerce. This was a great blow to the Kentuckians, for their products went from New Orleans to the world markets by sea. In 1800, Spain ceded Louisiana to France, and at the same time the Spanish Intendant at New Orleans notified the Americans, in violation of our treaty with Spain, that they should no longer use New Orleans as a port of deposit from which to reship their merchandise. This meant the destruction of the commerce of the Kentuckians, and threatened the establishment of a powerful enemy-empire on our border. Napoleon, the First Consul of France, sent a large army to take possession of New Orleans. Fortunately for America, neither this army, nor the second that was sent, ever arrived.¹ Governor Garrard laid these matters before the Kentucky legislature, which immediately ad-

¹ These armies were ordered to stop at Santo Domingo and subdue the negro leader, Toussaint Louverture, and his followers who had overthrown French rule. Between the losses in battle and the breaking out of yellow fever both these armies were almost destroyed.

dressed a message to the President declaring the act of the Spanish Intendant was a violation of the treaty, and pledging to the Federal Government, “ourselves to support at the expense of our lives and fortunes, such measures as the honor and interests of the United States may require.” About this time Spain refused to approve of the act of the Intendant at New Orleans, declaring it was “purely personal” and “without the sanction” of His Spanish Majesty and thus avoided a threatened conflict.

Louisiana Purchase.—Now no declaration of war had been made between us and France, though there had been a number of naval battles, and a bloody war seemed certain. Napoleon bargained for Louisiana with the view of establishing a great French province in America; however, France was on the eve of another war with Britain, and she made haste to sell the territory to the United States for fear England, who controlled the sea, would seize it. Jefferson, who was now President of the United States, seeing the danger of a French Empire springing up on our border, became an eager buyer. So, in 1803, this vast domain was purchased at a cost of only \$15,000,000, or less than three cents an acre. Enthusiasm ran high in Kentucky when it was realized that at last the Mississippi was open to free navigation, that a threatening foe was removed from our back door, and that a boundless fertile territory was opened to settlement. Toasts were drunk to the President and Congress and the ministers who made the purchase. Strange to say, many of the Federalists denounced the purchase as unconstitutional, extravagant and foolish, and en-



deavored to prevent its ratification by Congress.¹ They failed to see, as we do now, that a menace to our national growth had been removed, and that, as Napoleon said, when he signed the treaty, "I have now given to England a rival that shall some day humble her pride and break her power."

Some Results of the Louisiana Purchase.—The purchase of Louisiana was the greatest event of Jefferson's administration. It prevented the setting up of an empire on our western border; it gave us control of the Mississippi and other western waters; and it more than doubled the total area of our country at that time. The westward march of the United States, which had been temporarily stopped at the Mississippi, now suddenly leaped across its waters on toward the great Pacific.

Greenup's Administration.—In 1804, Christopher Greenup, who, like his two predecessors, had been a Revolutionary officer, was elected governor. Like his predecessors he was a man of strong character, firm, able and prudent in the discharge of his duties. The census of 1800 showed an enormous increase in the population of the State. There were now a total of 221,955 inhabitants, which included 40,343 slaves and 737 colored freemen. By 1810 the total population had increased to 406,511, of which 80,561 were slaves, and 1,713 were colored freemen.

Westward Expansion.—Before the purchase of Loui-

¹ Jefferson was taunted because he took greater liberties with the Constitution than the Federalists had ever done. He admitted this, but replied that the opportunity was too golden to let slip, and that the people would ratify his act. And so they did.

siana, settlers were pressing against the western boundaries and some had even settled in Spanish territory. As early as 1795 Daniel Boone and some companions had crossed the Mississippi and settled in what is now the State of Missouri. It was due to this pressure of the western people, that the purchase of Louisiana territory was brought about. As Mr. Roosevelt tells us, "The winning of Louisiana was due to no one man, and least of all to any statesman or set of statesmen. It followed inevitably upon the great westward thrust of the settler-folk; a thrust which was delivered blindly, but which no rival race could parry, until it was stopped by the ocean itself." Again the hour had struck for the forward movement of the pioneers who had floated down the Ohio or passed over Cumberland Gap to settle the wilderness. The Kentuckian was by birth and training a colonizer, and as soon as the western barrier was removed he eagerly pressed on to new adventures and to the founding of new States.

The Great Religious Revival.—During the first years of this century a great religious revival spread throughout the State. The fervent zeal of Methodism that took hold upon the rugged Kentucky settlers amounted to fanaticism. The Baptists, Presbyterians, and other Christian denominations caught the religious spirit of the times. The pause in warfare had relieved the strain of a hazardous life and had given the minds of the people a chance to take account of their spiritual welfare. The rugged backwoodsmen now prayed and shouted with a fury that equalled the bloody courage with which they defended their homes

and killed and scalped their savage foe. Camp meetings were held everywhere. One held at Paris is said to have been attended by twenty thousand people. The frontier preacher condemned sin and the sinner in the rugged language of backwoods days. Thousands were thrown into nervous rigors, called "jerks," which were then believed to be signs of divine power. The extreme sordidness of a material life was followed by an extreme spiritual excitement. Between people deeply religious, and the godless and lawless elements bitter hatred sometimes sprang up that resulted in open conflicts. Sometimes the frontier preacher was assaulted by a hardened sinner, and often the former "thrashed a confession" out of the sinner's soul. Such religious fury may seem strange to the reader, but the revival did much good. The Kentucky people needed a baptism of the "gospel fire." In many cases the results were momentary, but, upon the whole, it left a blessed influence, and did much to smooth away the ruggedness and bloody rudeness of former years.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What circumstance led to a revision of the State Constitution? What changes were made? What effect did the treaty with Spain have upon the commerce of Kentucky? What enemies stood in the way of the development of foreign trade? Why was the purchase of Louisiana important to Kentucky? Give some of the results of the purchase. Tell about the great westward expansion. Describe the religious revival that swept over the country at this time.

CHAPTER XXX

BURR'S CONSPIRACY

BATTLE OF TIPPECANOE

WITH the coming of peace and prosperity to the Kentuckians, and with the opening of the vast stretches of rich soil of the Louisiana Territory to free settlement, no excuse for disloyalty or discontent remained. Nor under such conditions were there any chances for successful conspiracies and intrigues. Besides, the people had grown more loyal to the Federal Government and were ready to oppose its enemies by war, if necessary. Notwithstanding these facts, there were some reckless border spirits who were easily deceived by bold adventurous leaders who championed any daring enterprise.

In the spring of 1805, one of the most brilliant, one of the most fascinating and resourceful men in American history, arrived in Kentucky. He was a grandson of Jonathan Edwards, had been Vice-President of the United States and had missed the presidency by only one vote. He was a political opponent of Alexander Hamilton, and in a duel had slain his rival. Discredited politically in the East, and condemned by public sentiment, he fled to Kentucky. He was a restless, ambitious man of great genius, but withal unscrupulous and unpatriotic. He came to the West with his mind haunted with dreams of founding an

empire in the new territory. He knew of the unrest and rebellious intrigues that had disturbed Kentucky for many years, but seems not to have known that the western people were now loyal and contented.

Blennerhassett.—Burr first visited Herman Blennerhassett, a rich, romantic Irishman, who lived on a large island in the Ohio, near Marietta. He enlisted Blennerhassett and his fortune in his wild scheme.¹ He visited many other places and called upon the leading men of the West, but most of all he sought out General James Wilkinson, his Revolutionary companion-in-arms, and a man he already knew to be “fit for treasons, stratagems and spoils.” He met General Wilkinson, probably by agreement, at Fort Massac on the Ohio. Wilkinson was now a commander of the armies of the United States, and, at the time, governor of Louisiana. However, he lent Burr an interested ear, and fitted him out with a fine boat in which to proceed to New Orleans, and gave him a letter to Daniel Clark, the richest man in that city. Burr was warmly received in New Orleans and got much encouragement in his treasonable undertaking from certain dissatisfied people. On his return he again visited General Wilkinson, now at St. Louis. In the meantime, Wilkinson had tested his officers and found they were loyal to the Union, and that the people would not be moved by Burr’s intrigues. Accordingly he refused to take further part in the scheme.

Burr Solicits Aid of the British Minister.—Before leaving Philadelphia, Burr had talked over his plans with Mr. Merry, the British Minister, in an endeavor to

¹ Read the story, “Blennerhassett,” by Pidgin.

enlist the aid of England. He believed that country would back him in any project that would stand in the way of the growth of the United States. He returned to Washington in the fall and called upon the British Minister to learn, with dismay, that England would not enter into his scheme. During the few months he



AARON BURR

remained in the East he sought out his old friends and any one else who had a grievance against the government, in an effort to enlist them in his enterprise.

Burr Returns to Kentucky.

—In 1806 he again started west accompanied by his brilliant and devoted daughter, Theodosia, who was now the wife of Governor Alston, of South Carolina. They stopped at the Blennerhassett's, where Theodosia remained, while

her father proceeded to Cincinnati, Nashville, and other places. Preparations were now being made for the expedition. Boats were built at Marietta and on the Cumberland; provisions were purchased and men were enlisted and armed. Burr moved from town to town with the energy and speed that marks a man of iron will.

Vague Plans.—Most of those who enlisted with him believed the sole object of the expedition was the con-

quest of Mexico. He told every kind of story, varying them according to the person or suitableness of the time. "It is always difficult to find out exactly what a conspirator of Burr's type really intended, and exactly how guilty his various temporary friends and allies were."¹ It is likely that his plans were not well formed in his own mind, and that after his expedition was once launched, he would be guided by the current of events. Certain it is, that he dreamed of a great western empire and of himself as its powerful ruler. But all his dreams of power, and of the separation of the West from the East, were foredoomed to failure. His endeavor to draw General Jackson, General Adair, and others into his plans has left a cloud upon the name of each, though it is believed they committed themselves to Burr's scheme only upon his statement that he had the backing of the Federal Government. Reports of Burr's treason having reached President Jefferson, he ordered an investigation. Orders were also issued to all Federal officers in the West to be on their guard and to resist any treasonable attempt that might be made.



JOSEPH HAMILTON DAVEISS

Burr's First Trial.—About this time Joseph Hamilton

¹ Roosevelt, "The Winning of the West," Vol. VI, p. 225.

Daveiss, United States District Attorney, appeared at Frankfort and brought a charge of high treason against Burr. Burr had many friends in Kentucky. Daveiss, who was a despised Federalist, was accused of persecuting a political enemy. Interest in the trial ran high. Burr employed Henry Clay and John Allen for his counsel. Clay, who was now a United States Senator, being a loyal patriot, refused to defend Burr unless the latter would give him a written pledge of his innocence. This Burr did, and the written assurance of innocence completely deceived Clay, who set about Burr's defense. After many delays the jury returned a verdict in Burr's favor, which his friends celebrated by giving a ball in his honor. Daveiss and Marshall who had mistrusted and exposed Burr's schemes, were condemned for a time, but the present verdict of history shows that they were right and popular clamor was wrong.

Notwithstanding his acquittal, Burr's ambitious dreams of wealth and kingly power now clouded what might have been a brilliant career. A thunderbolt in the form of a proclamation from the President struck and shattered his whole scheme. At last Jefferson was awake to the danger of the plot which he had been watching, and ordered Burr's arrest. Wilkinson, who was now in New Orleans, made a brave show of his patriotism by arresting many suspects, none of whom were as guilty as himself. He had already deserted Burr, and openly betrayed him, but at heart he himself was still a traitor.

Burr's Arrest and Second Trial.—In the meantime, Burr's little flotilla of boats had started down the Ohio

on their inglorious expedition. Hearing of the President's proclamation, Burr abandoned his party when near Natchez, and disguised as a riverman, fled eastward through the woods. After many hardships and remarkable perils he was captured and brought to trial. After a long and exciting trial which took place at Richmond, Virginia, he was acquitted on the plea that his plans had not been carried far enough to violate the Constitution, which says that treason "shall consist only in levying war against" the United States "or in adhering to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort." The charge against Burr was not legally proven. The jury, therefore, acquitted him, but the American people have ever regarded him with just suspicion.

Burr's Punishment.—Burr visited many foreign countries, but everywhere he was looked upon with mistrust. His dishonor followed him to all lands and, for a time, he became a man without a country. He finally returned to New York and took up his practice of law and honorably set about paying off his many debts. His devoted daughter, Theodosia, and her child lost their lives in a storm at sea and the saddened man was left alone in his old age. His last days were filled with deeds of charity, and doubtless he fully repented his folly.

Governor Scott.—General Charles Scott succeeded Greenup as governor in 1808. John Allen, a promising young lawyer, was his opponent, but the Kentuckians honored the military services of General Scott by choosing him as their chief executive. At this time the tide of settlers was moving north and

westward from Kentucky. The Indians along the Wabash grew restless on account of this advance and arose in rebellion under their chiefs, Tecumseh and his brother, the Prophet. They were further urged to war by the English, who now expected another conflict with the United States.

Battle of Tippecanoe.—General William Henry Harrison, who was now governor of the Indiana Territory, called for volunteers to subdue the warring tribes along the Wabash. Many of the brave Kentuckians eagerly responded to the call. A battle was fought at Tippecanoe November 7, 1811. Harrison was surprised by a night attack but he drove off the enemy, who sustained a considerable loss. Among the Kentuckians slain were Colonel Joseph H. Daveiss and Colonel Abraham Owen. In honor of their noble lives and heroic death, Daveiss and Owen Counties bear their names. Events were now moving swiftly toward a second war with Great Britain.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What special reasons did the people have at this time to be loyal and contented? Who was Aaron Burr? Who was Blennerhassett? Give an account of Burr's treasonable schemes. Describe his arrest and first trial. Why was he not found guilty on his second trial? In what way was he punished? Question for class debate: Resolved that Aaron Burr was not guilty of treason. Tell about the Battle of Tippecanoe.

CHAPTER XXXI

KENTUCKY IN THE WAR OF 1812

ENGLAND and France had been almost continuously at war during the early part of this century. Each had forbidden neutral nations to trade with the other, and each had preyed upon the commerce of our country. The United States had endeavored to remain neutral, and had submitted to many insults and injuries rather than go to war.

British Tyranny.—British ships often overhauled our vessels and seized our sailors on the pretext of their being Englishmen, saying, “Once an Englishman always an Englishman.” The American people were mostly English but not subjects of Britain. Englishmen, who had but recently become naturalized, and who were now citizens of the United States, were seized as deserters. In some cases even Americans who had fought in the Revolution for their independence were taken, and were forced to serve in the British navy. While the laws of nations do not forbid the search of vessels furnishing war supplies to an enemy, they do forbid the impressment of the citizens of a friendly country into the service of another. England needed sailors and soldiers to carry on her wars and used many false excuses for making these unlawful searches, and for the impressment of our seamen into her service. Jefferson and Madison, who

were our presidents during these troublous years, made many efforts to avert war by peaceable measures but without success.

Troubles with France.—France likewise continued to make war upon our commerce, and in a few instances seized American vessels. Our rights were violated by both England and France and justified war against both. But our country was young and unprepared for war even with a single Power. The people remembered the bitter conflict with England and the help received from France in the Revolution, consequently, the majority clamored for war against England.

The attacks made by the British navy upon our vessels brought forth a strong protest in Kentucky as early as 1808. Hatred for England had been smoldering since the days of the Revolution. The British still held Canada and many posts about the Great Lakes, and from these they furnished arms and ammunition to the Indians. The western people had reasons to believe also that the British officers of Canada were encouraging the Indian attacks upon our frontier. Under date of January 6, 1808, the Kentucky House of Representatives declared that, "we are willing not only to express the public sentiment, but also to pledge our honor, our blood and treasure in support of such measures as may be adopted by the general government, to secure and protect the peace, dignity, and independence of the Union against foreign invasion, and to chastise and bring to a state of reason our haughty and imperious foes."¹ War against England became a fireside topic in every Kentucky

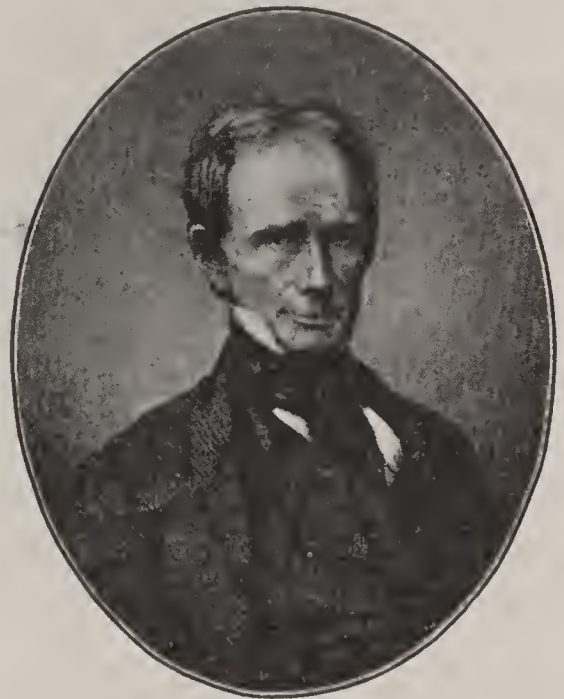
¹ See McElroy, "Kentucky in the Nation's History," p. 317.

home, and the newspapers of the States charged the British navy with “acts of perfidy and murder.” The West was eager for war, and fretted at the timid and hesitating policy of the Federal Government. Such was the temper of the people that Henry Clay and many other Kentuckians favored the wresting of Canada completely from the British.

Attitude of New England.

—Many of the Federalists of New England were interested in commerce with Britain and other foreign lands, and opposed the war as a bad financial policy, as well as needless and wicked. As usual, in great questions, the opinion of the people was divided.

War Declared.—But delays only added greater insults and injuries. Finally the peace-loving Madison yielded to popular demands and signed a declaration of war against England, June 18, 1812. The long-delayed crisis had come, bringing with it the suffering and woe that belong to war. The people of the West rejoiced at an opportunity for revenge, but New England hotly opposed an armed conflict, and her business men refused to loan money to carry on the fight. The Federalist leaders of this section talked freely of secession from the Union in preference to war.



HENRY CLAY
The Great Pacificator.

Kentucky to the Front.—The Government requested of Kentucky five thousand five hundred men, but many more than that number volunteered. The noble resentment against the tyranny of England called forth the best and most worthy of her sons, and many sacrificed their lives in the war that followed. While the battle of Tippecanoe had been fought before war was declared, it was a prelude to the conflict. The Indian attacks which led to this battle had been encouraged by the talk of war between our country and England.

On August 15, two thousand troops, consisting of regulars and volunteers, assembled at Georgetown and were placed under the command of General John Payne. Before their departure they were addressed by Henry Clay, a “War Hawk,” who rallied their fighting spirit and encouraged them to heroic action.¹ On their march to Detroit, the troops learned of its cowardly surrender by General Hull. Governor Scott at once called in council some leading statesmen and citizens of Kentucky to consider the war situation. This council decided “to give Harrison a brevet commission of Major General in the militia of Kentucky, and to authorize him to take command of the detachment now marching to Detroit.”

Shelby Becomes Governor Again.—Governor Scott’s term of office at this time expired, and Isaac Shelby, his successor, received Harrison’s formal acceptance and referred his appointment to President Madison. Notwithstanding this unusual and irregular method,

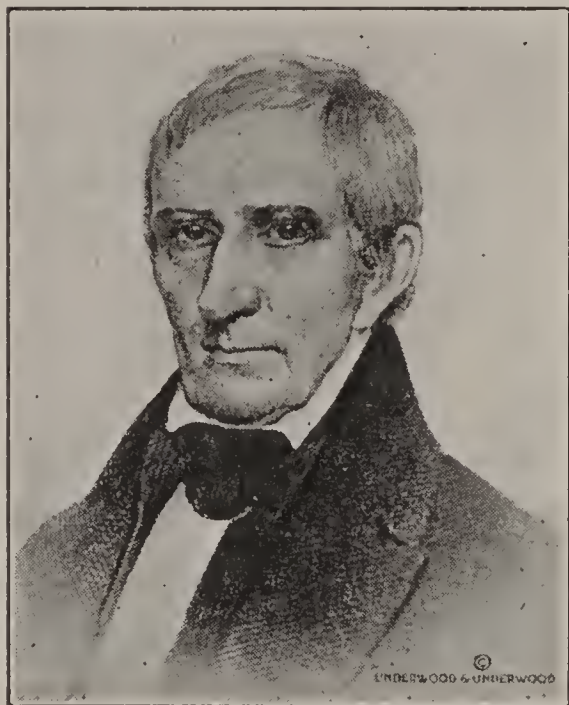
¹ The young Republicans, led by Henry Clay of Kentucky and John C. Calhoun of South Carolina, who ardently favored war against England, were called “War Hawks.”

Madison submitted to the wishes of the Kentuckians and appointed Harrison instead of General James Winchester whom he had already selected. The Kentuckians trusted the hero of Tippecanoe and many more mounted volunteers gathered under his banner at once. The war spirit ran high, and the Kentucky papers boasted that if occasion required, "there would be scarcely a male inhabitant left in the State capable of bearing arms."

The difficulties that lay before General Harrison were increased by Hull's disgraceful surrender of the strong post at Detroit. The administration had promised Harrison ten thousand troops, but there were never more than six thousand in service at any one time. It was a long and difficult march across savage-infested swamps to the scene of the conflict. Winter had set in, and there was much suffering; many hardships, due to poor equipment and bad management of army stores were endured. On January 10, 1813, the Kentucky troops reached the Rapids of the Maumee, and there awaited the arrival of General Harrison. Since the time of their enlistment in August, they had done but little except to march and suffer, and destroy a few Indian villages. They were encamped in a frozen wilderness, their time of enlistment was about to expire without their having had the glorious thrill of a victory. That they probably would have to return to their State as do-nothings disheartened them.

First Battle of Frenchtown.—Then came a call from Frenchtown on the river Raisin, thirty-eight miles away, for help to prevent a threatened massacre by the savage allies of the British. General Winchester

at once dispatched about six hundred Kentucky volunteers under Colonels William Lewis and John Allen, who routed a large body of Indians and captured Frenchtown. A strong force of British was not far away, General Harrison and the main army was too far to support him, yet Winchester with a re-enforce-



WILLIAM HENRY HARRISON

ment of two hundred and fifty regulars under Colonel Wells hastened to Frenchtown. Shortly after his arrival, General Winchester was informed that a large force of British and Indians was on its way to attack him. In spite of this warning the most fatal security was felt, and little effort was made to prevent a surprise. "The news," says McAfee, "must have been discredited. . . . Col-

onel Lewis and Major Madison alone seemed to be on the alert; they cautioned their men to be prepared at all times for an attack."¹

Second Battle of Frenchtown.—Suddenly in the early morning of January 22, the little band was attacked by Colonel Proctor at the head of two thousand regulars and Indians. The company of American regulars which was encamped in an open field became panic-stricken and fled, pursued by the

¹ McAfee's "History of the Late War in the Western Country," p. 212.

slaughtering savages. Colonels Lewis and Allen led two companies from the shelter of the palisade and made a gallant effort to stay the panic but without effect, save to add more victims to the slaughter. The brave and brilliant young Allen was killed and Colonel Lewis was wounded and taken prisoner. General Winchester came upon the scene only in time to realize the tragedy of his neglect, and to be overpowered and captured while frantically endeavoring to rally his regulars. All was lost except most of the Kentucky volunteers who were sheltered behind the stockade. This unconquered, defiant band held off the enemy until requested by General Winchester to surrender on a promise from Proctor that all prisoners would be protected from his Indian allies.

Massacre of The Raisin.—The wounded Americans were left unprotected in the camp at Frenchtown. At dawn of the next day two hundred drunken savages, painted in hideous colors, fell upon these helpless prisoners with knife, tomahawk, and torch and did not spare a wounded soldier. The massacre of “The Raisin” became a name of horror in Kentucky, and, “Remember the Raisin,” the defiant war cry in many battles that followed. Colonel Proctor failed to protect his helpless prisoners, and for his failure has received the merited censure of all humane people. There was mourning in many Kentucky homes for heroes who would never return. There fell then many of Kentucky’s noblest sons, and the names of the heroes, Allen, Edmonson, Graves, Hart, and Hickman, honor the counties of Kentucky that now bear them. In the wake of this tragedy it is easy to see the wis-

dom of Kentucky in demanding Harrison instead of Winchester as commander of the army.

General Harrison in command of the right wing of the Western army reached the Rapids of the Maumee the same day Winchester entered Frenchtown. When told of the first battle of Frenchtown and Winchester's advance, he at once realized that with the two wings of his small army separated in the enemy's country, both were in danger of being destroyed. He sent to Governor Shelby in Kentucky for immediate re-enforcements and hurriedly set about the construction of Fort Meigs on the Maumee. When he learned of Winchester's defeat and the massacre that followed, he realized that his position was extremely critical. The time of enlistment of many of the volunteers had expired, and they refused to remain in so dangerous a position. Fortunately, Colonel Proctor did not follow up his victory at Frenchtown, and General Harrison's army escaped an attack until fortified and re-enforced.¹

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Why did the attacks on the United States vessels injure the commerce of Kentucky? Was the attitude of the Kentucky people to France and England the same? Did Kentucky favor war with either? How was the declaration of war received by the people of the West? What was the attitude of the people of New England? Describe the first and second battles of Frenchtown. Give an account of the massacre of the Raisin. What circumstances made General Harrison's position dangerous?

¹ An excellent account of this campaign is given in Young's "Battle of the Thames," Filson Club Publication, Louisville.

CHAPTER XXXII

CLOSE OF THE WAR OF 1812

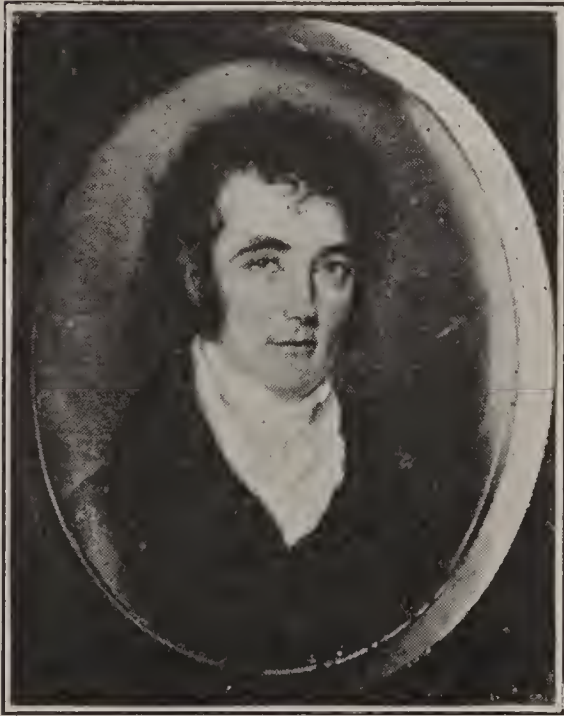
BATTLES OF THE THAMES AND NEW ORLEANS ¹

IN response to General Harrison's call for re-enforcements, Isaac Shelby, Kentucky's gallant Governor, at once enlisted four thousand men and placed them under the command of General Green Clay. In the meantime, the British had placed their batteries above and below Fort Meigs and stationed Tecumseh and his warriors to prevent General Clay's re-enforcements from joining Harrison. Colonel William Dudley's force of eight hundred men, which was sent to the north shore of the Maumee to capture the enemies' batteries, "elated by (their) success, followed the Indians, and was cut to pieces." Only one hundred and fifty escaped, and these were saved by the noble Tecumseh, who rushed into the midst of the slaughter with drawn sword and controlled the savages. After a short siege, which was vigorously repelled, Colonel Proctor, learning of the fall of Fort George, hastily retired to Fort Malden on the Detroit River. Harrison sent to Kentucky for re-enforcements, and began preparations for an attack upon Malden.

Call for Volunteers.—Governor Shelby called for more

¹ An excellent account of the War of 1812 may be found in Smith's "History of Kentucky," Chapter XXIV.

volunteers to meet at Newport, August 31, prepared for a campaign. Said he, "I will meet you there in person, I will lead you to the field of battle, and share with you the dangers and honors of the campaign." The watchword, "Old King's Mountain will lead us to victory!", expressed the full confidence of the



RICHARD M. JOHNSON

people in their Governor, the hero of King's Mountain. Colonel Richard M. Johnson, member of Congress from Kentucky, raised a regiment of mounted volunteers and marched to the front. Majors John J. Crittenden and William T. Barry, two eloquent young officers on Governor Shelby's staff, made fiery speeches to the troops and urged them to "Remember the Raisin."

They stirred every soldier's heart to deadly action by their patriotic appeals. The combined forces of Harrison and Shelby united on the southern shore of Lake Erie near Put-in-Bay September 21.

During the spring of 1813, Captain Oliver H. Perry had built a fleet on Lake Erie. With this he met the British fleet under Captain Barclay and utterly defeated it, and sent to General Harrison his famous message, "We have met the enemy, and they are ours—two ships, two brigs, one schooner and one sloop." Governor Shelby's re-enforcements reached the camp

of General Harrison at the time Captain Perry was landing his prisoners.

Colonel Johnson and his cavalry division, which had been left at Fort Meigs, now joined the rest of the army at Detroit. The army supplies and many of the soldiers were transported by Perry's fleet to Malden, which was found deserted and in ruins. Harrison pushed on rapidly in pursuit of Proctor, who was compelled to abandon much of his baggage in his flight.

Battle of the Thames.—On October 5, 1813, the Americans came upon the enemy in a protected position on the river Thames, eighty-six miles northeast of Detroit. Upon landing on Canadian soil Governor Shelby said to his troops, "Remember the Raisin River"; to which Harrison added, "but remember it only whilst victory is suspended. The revenge of a soldier can not be gratified on a fallen enemy." Three thousand Americans, nearly all of whom were Kentuckians, now faced nearly an equal number of British regulars and Indians. Harrison granted Colonel Johnson's request to charge the British line with his cavalry regiment, and placed General Henry's and General Desha's divisions in a manner to support the attack. Colonel Johnson appointed his brother, Lieutenant Colonel James Johnson, to charge the British regulars in front, while he himself led the charge against the Indians concealed in a wooded swamp. With the cry of, "Remember the Raisin," the Kentuckians dashed forward and soon put to rout or captured the main British force. Tecumseh and his trained warriors, however, bravely stood their ground. Colonel Johnson now chose a band of twenty picked men to lead a "Forlorn

Hope'' across the swamp to awe the savages and to draw their fire, and thus render safer the advance of the main body of troops before the Indians could reload their guns. Never was there a more heroic battle plan proposed, but the blood of Kentucky pioneers ran red in their veins that day, and they did not shrink from the sacrifice that was required. The charge was met by a terrible fire from fifteen hundred savage riflemen. Of the twenty who entered the charge, fifteen lay dying and the rest were wounded.¹ Colonel Johnson alone, though many times wounded, sat in his saddle. Behind the "Forlorn Hope" advanced the infantry, and for fifteen minutes the savages held their ground. Then fell the brave and noble Tecumseh, and with his fall a wail of grief and despair arose from savage throats. The Indians fled, the day was won, and the Raisin avenged. This complete victory ended the war in the Northwest.

We can not call the roll of all who honored our State by their heroic deeds in this campaign, but the reader should know a few of the distinguished leaders. There were General John Adair, the loyal Kentuckian, who afterwards fought the British at New Orleans; Barry and Crittenden, the brilliant young orators and brave soldiers; General Joseph Desha, afterwards governor of Kentucky; Colonels Richard M. Johnson and Charles Todd, who served our State in Congress. The

¹ William Whitley, of Lincoln County, Kentucky, led the charge and was killed. Johnson rode in the charge also, and is credited with having slain Tecumseh. There are reasons for believing that Whitley killed Tecumseh. Several chiefs were slain in the fight and all statements concerning the manner of their deaths are liable to error.

report of the battle made by General Harrison to President Madison mentions the zeal and courage of Shelby, Henry, Desha, Trotter, McDowell, Walker, Adair, Barry, Crittenden, and others. But most of all, the honor is to those who gave their lives for their country and who sleep under Canadian soil. War means woe, is always wicked, and is never justified except in defense of the right. It is to the credit of the Kentuckians that the British and Indian prisoners were treated kindly in spite of the desire to revenge the massacre of The Raisin. Following the charge made upon the British regulars, the cowardly Proctor fled through the woods with a few of his men and escaped.

Other events of victory and defeat in this war had occurred on land and sea, an account of which does not belong in a history of Kentucky. Our Government had never ceased to plead for a just and peaceable settlement of the trouble, and negotiations finally led to the Treaty of Ghent, December 24, 1814.

Battle of New Orleans.—In those days there were no telegraph lines, cables or other means of rapid communication. So, before news of the treaty reached America several more battles were fought. To one of these we must now turn our attention because of the important part that Kentuckians took in it. Napoleon had been overthrown by the Duke of Wellington at the battle of Waterloo in June, 1814, and this had released a powerful army for service in America. Ten thousand of Wellington's troops were now sent to America under Sir Edward Pakenham, a brother-in-law of the Great Duke. Our situation was

extremely critical. It was learned that Packenham's army would attack New Orleans, which was unprotected. General Andrew Jackson was appointed commander of the regular troops and all the militia that could be mustered before the blow fell. Jackson, who was a brave man of speedy and heroic action, made haste to put New Orleans in a state of defense. By the time the British landed he had an army of about four thousand six hundred men at his command, more than half of whom were Kentucky and Tennessee riflemen. Many of the militia had only their squirrel rifles and muskets, but they were skillful marksmen and gave a good account of themselves in the battle. On December 23, the British landed on a strip of ground eight miles below the city. Here Jackson made a sharp night attack upon them and drove them back until reinforcements came up. He was playing for more time to complete his defenses and for the arrival of expected re-enforcements. Jackson was all action, but fortunately Packenham was stupidly slow, else New Orleans might have fallen into his hands. Martial law was declared, slaves were compelled to dig ditches and throw up breastworks, and every available man and gun were impressed into service. January 8, 1815, the British army moved against the American breastworks with their royal artillery and red-coated columns of infantry. They came forward under perfect discipline, with colors flying and drums beating, while the American regulars and the backwoodsmen, eager for battle, awaited them from behind their breastworks. The battle parade of the British was intended to show their contempt for the American back-

woodsmen and to awe these sons of the forest with their own superiority in arms. Soon the American artillery began to tear through the solid lines of the British army with telling effect. When within rifle shot, a withering fire was poured into the closed ranks of the advancing enemy and they turned and fled. Twice they were rallied and twice more they were repulsed with dreadful slaughter. General Packenham and a number of the officers were among the slain. The trained veterans of Wellington, thoroughly beaten by the American backwoodsmen, withdrew to their ships—New Orleans was saved! ¹

The enemy lost twenty-six hundred killed, wounded, and prisoners, while the loss of the Americans was

¹ The daring coolness and unerring aim of the Kentucky riflemen is well illustrated in a story told by a British officer who observed the movements of the Americans through a field glass. "What attracted our attention most," says this officer, "was the figure of a tall man standing on the breastworks, dressed in linsey-woolsey, with buckskin leggins, and a broad-brimmed felt hat that fell around the face, almost concealing the features. He was standing in one of those picturesque graceful attitudes peculiar to those natural men dwelling in the forests. . . . At last he moved, threw back his hat-rim over the crown with his left hand, raised the rifle to the shoulder and took aim at our group. Our eyes were riveted upon him . . . but the distance was great. . . . We saw the rifle flash. . . . My right hand companion, as noble a fellow as ever rode at the head of a regiment, fell from his saddle." And, continues the narrative further on, "Again did he reload and discharge his rifle, with the same unfailing aim, and the same unfailing result; and it was with indescribable pleasure that I beheld, as we neared the American lines, the sulphurous cloud gathering around us, and shutting that spectral hunter from our gaze. We lost the battle and to my mind, the Kentucky rifleman contributed more to our defeat, than anything else; for while he remained in our sight, our attention was drawn from our duties" . . . etc. The backwoodsman referred to above was Ephraim M. Brank of Greenville, Ky. For full account of this heroic incident, see McElroy's "Kentucky in the Nation's History," p. 362, or Rother's "History of Muhlenberg County."

only seventy-one killed and wounded.¹ This decisive victory greatly redeemed the inglorious land campaigns that had been carried on during the war. On account of the illness of General Thomas, the command of the Kentucky troops fell to General John Adair, who gave a good account of himself and his Kentucky riflemen in the bloody conflict.

Results of the War.—Upon the wreck of this war the people became united. Those who had called the Hartford Convention in Hartford, Connecticut, to protest against the war and to threaten secession, were now busy denying their unpatriotic intentions. But their action and the general refusal of the Federalists to support the war put an end to the old Federalist Party. The success of the war did much to unite the people, and to usher in what is known in the history of our country as the “Era of good feeling.” The Treaty of Ghent gave to the United States absolute control of the Mississippi and the vast territory washed by its shores.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

How did Kentucky respond to Harrison’s call for more troops? Name some of the leading officers from Kentucky who took part in the war. Tell the story of the Battle of the Thames. Describe the Battle of New Orleans. Tell the story of Ephraim M. Brank given in the footnote. What good results followed the war?

¹ These were the losses that occurred in the main battle on January 8. There had been a number of losses on both sides in previous skirmishes.

CHAPTER XXXIII

FINANCIAL STRUGGLES

GEORGE MADISON, who was elected governor in 1816, suddenly died. The first contest in the legislature arose over the question whether it had the power to call another election to fill the vacancy. After a heated contest, no election was ordered and Gabriel Slaughter, the Lieutenant Governor, became Governor, which position he held until 1820.

Forty years had passed since the settlement of Kentucky. The close of the conflict of 1812, gave promise of an era of peace, but from many years of battle strife the Kentuckians turned to a period of political and financial troubles that disturbed the peace and hindered the progress of the Commonwealth. The Kentuckians had been schooled in the arts of border warfare and had learned but little of the arts of peace. They had come into possession of vast areas of fertile lands stretching north, south and west, even beyond the border of the State. Many had already pushed on across the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers in their greed for land and love of adventure. Little thought had been given to the political and financial welfare of the State. Grave problems now arose and many serious blunders were made, but in time, as we shall see, the people saw the weakness of these follies and profited by their mistakes.

Scarcity of Money.—During these earlier years there

was but little money in circulation and most of the trading was done by bartering. Tobacco and the skins of animals were the favorite mediums of exchange of values. There were but few coins in circulation and the dollars were cut into halves, quarters and eighths to make change.¹

Confusion in values also resulted from the circulation of money from other countries.

An extensive trade had been carried on with New Orleans and from thence by sea with other markets that brought into the State many coins. These coins represented to the traders real values, but when paper money, bills or bank notes appeared, they hesitated to accept it. This prejudice was largely due to their unpleasant remembrance of the worthless Continental currency that had been issued by the colonies many years before.

The Beginning of Banking.—The people were without any practical knowledge of banking and looked upon banks as enemies of the poor people and friends of the rich. They did not know that banks are necessary for the financial good of all the people. The first form of banking came by an accident of legislation in 1802. A charter was granted at this time to the Kentucky Insurance Company for the purpose of insuring the cargoes of merchandise to New Orleans and other markets, against accidents and losses. This company issued notes or certificates “payable to bearer” which were used for the payment of debts, just as bank notes are used. The company prospered, but it drew upon

¹ The eighths ($12\frac{1}{2}\phi$) became known as “bits,” hence the origin of the terms, two bits, six bits, etc.

itself the charge of being a "moneyed aristocracy" and, therefore, should be put down.

Kinds of Money.—Before proceeding further with the story of Kentucky's early financial troubles, it is well to consider a few of the principles that underlie sound money and sound banking. There are two kinds of money: coin, or *specie*; and paper money, that is, printed notes or bills which are promises to pay. Silver and gold, out of which most coins are made, are precious metals and have an *intrinsic* value. Of course the value of gold and silver changes from time to time but it is more stable than other values or forms of money. Paper money consists of bank or government promissory notes or bills, and is a good and safe money if the bank or government issuing it can redeem it in coin or other equivalents of value.¹

While war was going on in Europe, America was cut off from foreign trade but this only encouraged the building of American factories. At the close of the European wars, foreign goods were again sent to the United States to be sold in competition with American manufactured articles. These foreign goods were better and cheaper than our new factories could turn out, hence many factories failed and a temporary financial depression followed. Then, too, the European wars had caused the withdrawal of gold and silver from circulation and in its place paper currency was used. This currency not being considered good money caused the people to require more of it in pay-

¹ A careful explanation by the teacher of the principles of sound money will greatly aid the student in understanding the serious financial troubles of Kentucky from 1802 to 1842.

ment for merchandise, the effect of which made high prices. But at the close of the war, gold and silver again came into circulation. This return to "specie payment," that is, payment in coin, caused a drop in prices that led to bankruptcy. Many had gone into debt when prices were high and the loss in values meant for them bankruptcy.¹

The Bank of Kentucky.—The Bank of Kentucky had been chartered in 1806, with a capital stock of one million dollars. It had played an important part in the financial welfare of the State, but following the war of 1812, upon the resumption of specie payment, hard times forced the bank to suspend payment.² To give the bank relief the legislature unwisely allowed it to increase its capital stock to three million dollars. But this act did not restore confidence in the bank. Debtors could not get money to pay their debts, and creditors declined to accept the bills of the suspended bank. Again, in 1815, the legislature declared that any creditor who shall "refuse to take pay for debt, in the notes of the suspended bank" shall not collect his debt for one year. This was unjust, and was unsound financiering. The legislators did not seem to know that the demand for bank notes is based on the bank's ability to pay on demand. The managers of the banks did not understand the principles of sound banking, and the legislature proved to be a very poor physician in healing the financial ills. The people wanted relief

¹ The student should remember that paper money that was not considered as good as specie had caused the raising of prices, and that with the return to "sound money" it was but natural that prices should fall.

² That is, the Bank was unable to redeem in coin the paper money it had issued.

and required of the legislature a sort of financial, legislative quackery, whereas, time, industry, and economy were the proper remedies. The Bank of Kentucky had thirteen branches. In 1817, the legislature committed a still greater folly by making legal an agreement between the mother bank and its branches, by which none of these should be required to take the notes of the others. In other words, the creditors were required to accept notes (paper money) that the banks had issued, but which the banks themselves now refused to receive from each other.

The Forty Thieves.—There was great financial distress on every hand. A cry went up for more money, and again the legislature blundered by chartering forty independent banks and giving to them the privilege of issuing more currency than the amount of their capital stock. This, of course, put large amounts of paper money in circulation, and stimulated reckless spending and rash speculating. Soon these Independent Banks being unable to redeem their notes were popularly denounced as “The Forty Thieves.” In the meantime, the Bank of Kentucky had resumed the payment of its notes in coin, but the demand of the United States Bank which held many of its notes caused it to again suspend payment. For this, the United States Bank was bitterly condemned, because its act had brought financial ruin upon the State.

Not profiting by their past experiences, the people demanded relief through legislation. The politicians saw in this clamor for “Relief” a popular campaign cry. After the election of 1820, a majority of the legislators stood pledged to give relief by legislation.

Governor Adair.—The same year, General John Adair was elected Governor of Kentucky and he heartily approved of relief measures. The cry of the people was for money to relieve them from the burden of debt. Accordingly the legislature chartered the Bank of the Commonwealth with permission to issue large amounts of paper money which it was not required to redeem in gold and silver. It was roundly condemned by Humphrey Marshall and other members of the “Anti-Relief Party,” as the “paper bubble” and the “paper mill.” Indeed, they were right, for a government can not *create* money by the mere operation of a printing press. Money represents a face value which calls for an equal value in coin or other things.

A still greater crime was committed by the legislature in requiring the creditor to receive this money in payment of money due him, and gave to the debtor the right to “replevy the debt for two years,” if the creditor refused. This meant that the creditor was compelled to accept money that was not worth its face value or receive nothing at all for two years. This, in addition to other probable delays and the possible failure of the securities, might cause a total loss to the creditor.

Relief and Anti-Relief Parties.—Now the United States Constitution says that no State shall pass laws that will change or impair the obligation of contracts. It is clear that the laws passed by the legislature violated this section of the Constitution. Those who favored these laws were in the majority, and were known as the “Relief Party”; while the minority, who were op-

posed to them, was known as the "Anti-Relief Party." The majority vote thus violated the Constitution.

The United States Constitution Upheld.—The question was brought before Judge James Clark of the Clark County District. In spite of threats and bitter criticisms hurled against him by the Relief Party, he decided the laws were unconstitutional and therefore void. He was called before a special session of the legislature, and violent efforts were made to intimidate or remove him. Judge Clark, however, gallantly stood by his decision and was quickly supported by Judge Blair, of Fayette County, in an able and eloquent decision against the Constitutionality of the "Relief" act. The question went at once to the Court of Appeals, which was composed of Chief Justice Boyle, and William Owsley and Benjamin Mills, associate justices. These men, who soon became known as the "Old Court," were men of high character and great legal ability. Notwithstanding threats of vengeance, should they decide against the wishes of the majority of the people, they kept silent. In the autumn of 1823, they calmly and resolutely rendered a unanimous decision against the constitutionality of the act, declaring it totally void.

These decisions should have settled the question, but the people had become greatly excited; they still clung to the idea of the "sovereign will" of the State being above that of the Federal Constitution. The decision was an important and wise one. It upheld the sacred obligations of contracts, and likewise stood by the Federal Constitution, which is the supreme law of our land. However, the opinion of the Supreme Court

only increased the fury of the struggle between the Relief and Anti-Relief factions, as we shall learn in the next chapter.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Why was Kentucky unprepared to successfully meet and solve her financial problems? How was trade carried on during the great scarcity of money? How did the first form of banking begin in the State? Describe two kinds of money. How does the value of money affect prices? How did the Legislature endeavor to give financial relief? Why were some of the banks called "The Forty Thieves"? Describe the "Relief" and the "Anti-Relief" parties. What important decision was made at this time by the Court of Appeals?

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE OLD COURT AND NEW COURT PARTIES

THE plans of the Relief Party were defeated by the decision of the Supreme Court, as told in the preceding chapter, but since most of the people at this time favored relief by legislation, they were determined to remove the members of the Old Court. The State Constitution provided that members of the Supreme Court should hold their offices during good behavior, and could be removed only by a two-thirds vote of both houses of the legislature. The election of 1824 was a campaign of passionate political hatred. The cry, "Relief for the debtor," appealed to the voter, and under the leadership of General Joseph Desha, who was also a candidate, for governor, the Relief Party won by a

large majority. Desha, the newly elected governor, and his "relief" legislature met in December and summoned the members of the Supreme Court before the legislative bar. The gallant judges defended their decision with great courage and ability. They were answered by the able Rowan, Bibb, and Barry, representing the Relief Party. A vote was taken, but the two-thirds majority necessary to remove the Supreme Court Judges could not be obtained. Defeated in their efforts to oust the Judges, the Relief Party took immediate steps to repeal the law under which the Court of Appeals had been organized. This was done, and a "New Court" was appointed.

A Double Judiciary.—The New Court consisted of William T. Barry, chief justice, and John Trimble, James Haggin, and Rezin H. Davidge, associate justices. The Old Court denied the constitutionality of this act, and continued to hear cases brought before it. Thus, for a time, Kentucky had the strange experience of two Supreme Courts, each claiming authority. The opinions of lawyers were divided; most of the abler ones, however, recognized the Old Court and brought their cases of appeal before it. The New Court likewise held its sessions and heard cases brought before it. This confusion could not long endure. Again an appeal to the people was made. In the election that followed (1825) the Relief Party became known as the Old Court Party and the Anti-Relief, as the New Court party.¹ A large majority which favored the Old Court

¹ "Then came a bloodless campaign, which for energy and bitterness has never been equalled in the history of a State, if ever among English-speaking peoples. Not even the elections immediately preceding the

Party was elected to the lower house of the legislature, but the Senate remained loyal to the New Court. Bitter strife continued until the election of 1826, when the Old Court Party secured a majority in the Senate, also. A majority of both branches of the legislature was now favorable to the Old Court Party, and at its first session it repealed the act that established the New Court. It voted to the members of the Old Court their salaries for the time of their illegal removal and declared all acts of the New Court illegal and, therefore, void. The "replevin law," referred to in the preceding chapter, was also repealed. At last the storm was over and the good sense of a few wise leaders had prevailed. It was a foolish and dangerous effort on the part of one branch of our government to control another, and it was fortunate that it failed at this time.

United States' Banks.—The worthless paper money that had been forced upon the people was withdrawn and branches of the United States Bank were established at Louisville and Lexington. The courage, good sense and legal ability of the Old Court judges, Boyle, Mills, and Owsley, who withstood bitter criticisms in order to maintain the honor of contracts and to uphold our Federal Constitution, make a bright page in the judicial history of our State.

Unfortunately the wild legislative schemes of this time had the support of some of the ablest men of the State. William T. Barry, John Rowan, Governor

Civil War gave anything like the fury to men's minds as did the struggle between the old and new court parties in the election of 1825." Shaler's "Kentucky," p. 181.

Desha, and other men of high character and splendid ability were among the leaders of the Relief Party. Their conduct can be understood only by remembering the excitement of the times, caused by financial distress, and the extreme ideas of the people regarding the sovereignty of the State. During this long struggle the State had been dangerously near civil war, the whole machinery of law was out of gear and general confusion prevailed. Much bitterness still existed and party spirit ran high. It was necessary for the Legislature of 1825 to pass an act re-establishing the Old Court and repealing the unconstitutional laws, over the veto of Governor Desha, though he had sworn to defend both the Federal and State Constitutions. The struggle proved valuable in awakening the people to the importance of honesty in the keeping of contracts, and to the dangers that lay in passing hasty laws in times of emergency.

National Politics.—The people now quietly accepted the overthrow of the New Court and turned their attention from local affairs to the larger field of national politics. In 1822, at a joint meeting of both houses of the legislature Henry Clay was named as the fittest person to succeed President Monroe. Clay's belief in internal improvements at national cost, and a protective tariff for the benefit of our infant industries, together with his brilliance as an orator, appealed to the people. There were no waterways or highways connecting the East with the West. Clay believed the Government should build highways, open canals, and make improvements for the "general welfare" of the States. He may be rightly called "The father of in-

ternal improvements.” Clay became one of four candidates for the presidency in 1824, none of whom received a majority of the electoral votes, consequently the election was thrown into the House of Representatives. General Jackson had received the largest popular vote and would probably have been elected had not Clay, his political enemy, used his influence against him. At this time Clay was a member of the National House of Representatives and was, therefore, in a position to control enough votes to elect either Adams or Jackson. Next to Clay, Jackson was the most popular candidate in Kentucky. Clay was strongly urged by Kentuckians to support Jackson, but contrary to their wishes he threw his influence to John Quincy Adams and thus secured his election. This action aroused great anger in Kentucky, which was surpassed only by the indignation created when Adams appointed Clay as his Secretary of State. A charge of “bargain and corruption” was freely made; a charge, the “Great Commoner,” as Clay was popularly called, never completely outlived, though it was fully disproved. Jackson, the hero of New Orleans, was popular in the West, while the election of Adams only increased the old dislike of the Kentucky people for New England. The New Court Party bitterly opposed the Adams’ administration and boldly denounced Clay as a deserter. The Old Court Party supported Adams, but lost ground in so doing, while the popularity of Jackson increased. As the presidential election of 1828 approached, the Old Court Party became merged into the National Republican Party, and the opposite factions united under the name of

Democratic-Republican Party. In August, 1828, after a bitter political fight, Thomas Metcalfe was elected governor by the National Democratic Party. He defeated his opponent, William T. Barry, by a small majority. Metcalfe had risen by energy and force of character from a stone mason to honor and distinction. He was a member of Congress for many years and had won great popularity in his State. But in the presidential election in November Jackson carried the State by a large majority, and defeated Adams in the United States for president.

In a still more exciting campaign in 1832, the tables were completely turned. The Democratic-Republicans elected John Breathitt Governor, and gave to Clay, the National Republican candidate, a large majority for president, though he was defeated by Jackson for the presidency in the general election. The courage, energy, and eloquence of Clay made him a political leader in the State, and the Legislature, in 1831, elected him to the United States Senate. The National Democratic Party under different names continued to hold political control of the State for more than thirty years.

Although Clay had failed to secure Federal aid in improving rivers and building interstate highways, the State and many enterprising people in it were busy making these improvements. In 1835, the first railroad train in Kentucky ran over the newly built road from Lexington to Frankfort. In a few years railroads connected Lexington, Frankfort, Louisville, Covington, Paris and Maysville.

“Hard Times.”—We would think that the trying financial experiences of previous years had taught the people the danger of unsound currency and wild speculation, but not so. President Jackson had vetoed the charter of the United States Bank, and had the Government funds removed to a number of State Banks. Hundreds of new banks now sprung up in the states. Most of these had but little capital but proceeded to issue larger amounts of paper currency than they could redeem. Much of this money was paid to the United States for public lands. All went well until the Government began to require gold and silver in payment of all debts due it. The banks were unable to meet this requirement, consequently, these “wild-cat” bank notes became worthless for such payments. Naturally the people refused to accept money that the Government would not accept. The wild speculation that had flourished on the abundance of unsafe paper currency was now followed by the “hard times” of 1837. Even the National Bank deposits that had been removed by Jackson to State banks could not be returned to the Government. Many states were bankrupt and the Government was without money even to pay interest upon its bonds. Jackson had sown to the wind and Van Buren, now President, was reaping the whirlwind. At the close of Jackson’s administration a pocketful of money was a fortune, but now a pocketful of bank notes scarcely paid for a meal. Mercantile houses, factories, and banks failed; business was at a standstill, and many people were threatened with starvation. A panic of “hard times” and general discouragement prevailed.

Relief.—Again something had to be done. Kentucky found herself in a similar financial condition to that which existed during the days of the Relief and Anti-Relief parties. Much talk was again heard of some sort of *relief* measures. But the condition was no fault of the State, and was soon remedied by an act of Congress which allowed the United States to issue its own notes to the amount of ten million dollars. This was a good law, for the country was rich in resources, and was able to redeem all its notes. It was the beginning of the “sub-treasury system,” which was unpopular at first but which has proven to be a wise plan and one that is still in force.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Show the relations between the Relief and Anti-Relief Parties and the New and Old Court Parties. How did the Constitution stand in the way of the Relief Party? Describe the conflict between the New and Old Court Parties. How did the struggle finally end? What national questions came up at this time? Who has been called “The father of internal improvements”? Why? How did Henry Clay bring about the election of President Adams? Why did the Kentuckians resent it? Explain the cause of the “hard times.” What important relief law was passed by Congress and what effect did it have?

CHAPTER XXXV

HAPPENINGS OF THIRTY YEARS

The Purchase; Passing of the Pioneers; Inventors; Educators; and Artists.—We must now turn our attention from the financial turmoil of the times to a review of other important matters of these years. Notwithstanding the political strife and the financial setbacks, the rapid development of the State went on. Many of Clay's internal improvement plans, which had the support of the Kentuckians, had been adopted by Congress. Money was appropriated from time to time for the construction of "The Cumberland Road" to reach from Cumberland, on the Potomac, to the Ohio. The Government encouraged similar enterprises in Kentucky and other states, and many schemes for internal improvement were carried out.

Earthquakes 1811-13.—In November, 1811, the whole valley of the Mississippi was shaken by a great earthquake. It was the most alarming shock that has ever been felt east of the Rocky Mountains, and was most distressing in southwestern Kentucky. The earth's surface rose and fell like mighty ocean waves. The waters of the Mississippi suddenly rolled up stream with a great roar. An area of several hundred square miles near the river finally sank below the river bed. Into the basins thus made water poured and formed Reel-Foot and other lakes of this region. Shocks

were felt at intervals for two years but gradually earth movements ceased, leaving a large area of fertile lands under water. Fortunately, few people lived in this section of Kentucky at the time of the earthquake, otherwise great loss of life and property would have occurred.

“The Purchase.”—That portion of Kentucky lying between the Tennessee and the Mississippi Rivers and which now comprises the counties of McCracken, Marshall, Hickman, Ballard, Fulton, Carlisle, Graves and Calloway was still claimed by the Chickasaw Indians in 1818. The eagerness of the western people for land was causing many to settle in this territory against the protests of the Indians. In October, 1818, the United States purchased the Chickasaw claims, a portion of which lay in Tennessee. The question of the boundary, or dividing line between the two states, at once arose. In January, 1818, the Kentucky legislature appealed to Congress to fix the boundary, that each state might know the limit and extent of its authority. During the three years’ delay much confusion and disorder arose on account of the unsettled county boundaries on this line. However, an agreement was reached by a commission in 1821, which fixed the boundary between this portion of Kentucky and Tennessee at 36°-30′ north latitude. Thus a large area of fertile land was added to the State, and her western boundary was permanently extended to the Mississippi River.

Kentucky was now a land of peace, plenty and safety. The sullen savage came no more, save as an occasional visitor on a peaceful errand. The buffalo and other

wild animals had retreated or had been destroyed and much of the noble forests had given place to fruitful fields and orchards. Many splendid mansions had sprung up in the place of log cabins, and towns and villages had been founded in every portion of the State. The days of pioneer hazards were over and those who had first come to the State were now old, many having passed the last frontier into the great unknown.

Clark.—George Rogers Clark, the noble hero who had achieved so much for his State and his country, now suffered from disease and a mental anguish caused by the neglect of the country he had served so well. No more would his country call for the services of the greatest military genius that figured in the early history of Kentucky. He died at Locust Grove, near Louisville, in 1818. Well had he merited his eternal repose in Cave Hill Cemetery, near Louisville, under the soil he helped to settle and to defend from its foes.

Boone.—Likewise passed Daniel Boone, the truest of all pioneers, from his distant Missouri home. Like Clark, he too had been neglected by his country and those he had served so bravely in days of peril. Boone died in September, 1820. His remains were moved to Frankfort in 1845, and a modest monument was erected to mark the spot. At last the State recognized the great services of the brave old pioneer, but too late to give him the comfort he deserved.

“A dirge to the brave old pioneer,
His pilgrimage is done;

He hunts no more the grizzly bear,
 About the setting sun.
 Weary at last of chase and life,
 He laid him here to rest,
 Nor recks he now what sport or strife
 Would tempt him further west."¹

Kenton.—In April, 1836, passed Simon Kenton, by a strange fate, in sight of the spot in Ohio where the Indians, many years before, had prepared to burn him at the stake. "The crafty offsprings of peace, who had slept in the lap of eastern ease and security, while this noble pioneer was enduring the hardships of the wilderness . . . crept in when the fight, and toil, and danger were past, and by dishonorable trick . . . and cunning procedure, wrested the possessions bought at such a terrible price from the gallant unlettered, simple-hearted man . . ."² And thus it happened in many cases, and thus it often occurs, that some sow that others may reap. The brave, big-hearted old pioneer was not schooled in the ways of the unscrupulous who by the twists and turns of law stole from him his land titles. The typical pioneer often lost his land through the simple trust he placed in his fellow men, and by failure to legally clear his own land titles. This caused many to move on to other wildernesses in search of unclaimed lands.

Isaac Shelby.—In the death of Isaac Shelby in 1826, Kentucky lost a man of many useful and noble quali-

¹ O'Hara, "The Old Pioneer." The student should read the entire poem.

² Collins, "History of Kentucky," Vol. II, p. 451.

ties. He was born in Maryland, of Welsh parentage, and spent his early years on the wild borders of his native State and of Virginia. He was at once a pioneer, a Revolutionary soldier, an Indian fighter, and a Statesman. He took an important part in the battle of the Great Kanawha, planned the battle of King's Mountain, and successfully led part of the attack. He was a member of the convention that framed our first state constitution and became Kentucky's first governor. After retiring from public life in 1816, he was selected by President Monroe as Secretary of War, but, on account of his age and his desire for private life, he declined to accept the appointment. His last public act was as a commissioner to treat with the Chickasaw Indians for the purchase of the lands in the western part of our State, now known as The Purchase. "Old King's Mountain," as he was familiarly called, gave a long life of service to the State of his adoption and a loving loyalty to our Great Country.

Richard H. Menefee.—Menefee, one of the most brilliant men of this period, was born in Bath County in 1810. He had the fiery eloquence of Patrick Henry but surpassed him in logic and learning. He was sent to Congress in 1837 and at once attracted the admiration and attention of its ablest members. Newspapers throughout the land teemed with his praise, but in the midst of his brilliant career his frail body succumbed to disease, and the bright star of this wonderful man's life went out when he was only thirty-one years of age.

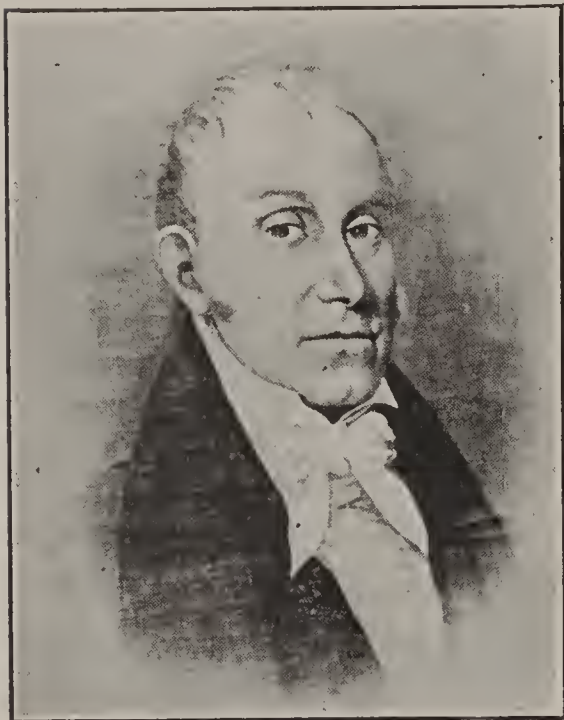
Inventors.—Orators, statesmen, and warriors make the history of a country brilliant and heroic, but the

men who work in the quiet places of earth, writing its literature, and making discoveries in science and art, probably render mankind the greater service. For many years following 1826, Thomas H. Barlow, a native of Nicholas County, was quietly at work in his shops at Lexington turning out many inventions. He successively built a steam locomotive, invented the rifled cannon, and an automatic nail and tack machine. He also invented the Planetarium, an instrument to show the movements of the earth and other planets about the sun. The first one was completed and sold to Girard College, Philadelphia, in 1849.

William Kelley located at Eddyville in 1846 to engage in the manufacture of iron. By his knowledge of chemistry and by careful experiments he discovered the "Bessemer Process" of converting the crude iron ore into steel by forcing blasts of air through the molten material. An English manufacturer, Henry Bessemer, first gave to the public the new process and attempted to secure a patent on it in America, but the United States Patent Office properly awarded it to Kelley. From the energy and the fertile mind of Kelley, working in the little town of Eddyville many years ago, has come the complete revolution of the steel industry of the world.

Education and Art.—This era is famous in the history of our State not only for its able lawyers and statesmen but for the number of noted educators. Under the presidency of the accomplished Dr. Horace Holly, Transylvania University was recognized as one of the leading institutions of learning in America. Rafinesque, one of the greatest scientists of any time, oc-

cupied the chair of Natural Sciences and Modern Languages. Many young men journeyed over the mountains from the East to attend the University and to mingle in the literary society of Lexington, which soon was called the "Athens of the West." During the early years of this century some of the greatest



DR. EPHRAIM MCDOWELL

physicians in the world lived in Kentucky. Dr. Ephraim McDowell, son of the noted judge, Samuel McDowell, already mentioned, became a pioneer in the field of surgery. He performed operations yet unknown to the world and his discoveries have saved the lives of thousands of women. "Wherever surgery is known, his name is known." In 1817, Transylvania University Medi-

cal College had such men as Doctors Daniel Drake, Benjamin Dudley and Joseph Buchanan, who were leaders in medicine and surgery. A remarkable number of the graduates of Transylvania became noted in the history of our country.

During these years, likewise, Matthew H. Jouett, a native of Mercer County, was painting many of the celebrated portraits now prized as high works of art. Joel T. Hart, of Clark County, became one of the most celebrated sculptors in his day. He began his career as a stone-mason and in spite of many obstacles,

he achieved fame. He spent twelve years working on his masterpiece, which he named "Woman Triumphant." Up to the time of his death he was still working to perfect it.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What was done by Congress for internal improvements? Describe the earthquake of 1811. What part of the State is known as the "Purchase"? How was it obtained? Give account of the death of some of the noted pioneers. Give a sketch of Isaac Shelby. Mention some of the inventors and tell what they did. Give an account of some leaders in education and art.

CHAPTER XXXVI

STATE AFFAIRS AND THE MEXICAN WAR

Three Whig Governors.—At this time the National Republican Party, now called Whigs, was in power. Henry Clay, who was still the idol of the Kentuckians, was its ambitious leader, and later its candidate for President. In 1836, the Whigs elected Judge James Clark Governor. It will be recalled that it was Judge Clark who had given his decision against the unjust and unconstitutional replevin laws. Again, in 1840, the Whigs elected for Governor Robert P. Letcher, who had been a member of Congress from Kentucky for ten years. During the exciting contest of 1844, Judge William Owsley, a distinguished member of the Old Court Party, became the nominee of the Whigs. The Democratic nominee was Major William O. Butler,

an able man and a brave soldier, who had fought at the Raisin and at New Orleans. Notwithstanding the merited popularity of Major Butler, Judge Owsley was elected.

In 1842 another attempt was made to revive "relief measures," but the people had learned that laws do not cure financial ills. Fortunately, Kentucky had at this time Thomas Marshall, Richard Menefee, Henry Clay, and other able leaders who gave wise counsel in the conduct of the political and financial affairs of the State.

The Shadow of Slavery.—Slavery was now both a state and a national issue that cast its darkening shadow over the entire country. It had been introduced into Kentucky while the State was yet a part of Virginia; and, while it was permitted and protected by law, there were many who opposed it. It was but natural for the freedom-loving Kentuckians to look with suspicion upon the enslavement of human beings. Indeed, there were many instances where the master freed his slaves and even provided for their welfare afterwards. About this time, Cassius M. Clay, son of General Green Clay, came under the influence of William Lloyd Garrison, the great abolitionist. He caught the burning words and spirit of Garrison and resolved to "give slavery a death struggle." He says, "I felt all the horrors of slavery; but my parents were slaveholders; all my kindred in Kentucky were slaveholders; and I regarded it as I did other evils of humanity, as the fixed law of nature or God." Such was the attitude of many Kentucky slaveholders at this time. Clay, who became known as the "Lion of

Whitehall," stirred up the slaveholders by vaunting his extreme abolition theories in harsh and intolerant language. At this time (1845) he was publishing *The True American* in Lexington. It was a violent abolition paper and was stirring up strife on the slavery question. While Clay was confined to a sick bed a committee of citizens waited on him and ordered him to suspend the publication. Upon receiving a defiant refusal to do so, the committee packed up his printing outfit and shipped it to Cincinnati. The slave question became the source of much ill feeling in the issues that led to the Mexican War.

Settlement of Texas.—Let us go back a few years and remind the reader that the boundary of the Louisiana Territory was vague, and that there were many statesmen who still claimed that Texas was a part of Louisiana. In 1819, in spite of many protests the United States abandoned its claim to Texas. About 1820, many land-hungry settlers from the South and West began to knock noisily at the door of the Texas border. At first Mexico welcomed them and permitted many colonies to be established on Texas soil. After a time, however, she became alarmed at the rapid growth of these colonies and attempted to exercise an unlawful and tyrannical rule over them.

Texas Revolution.—In 1835, the Texans revolted against Mexico and declared their independence. News of their struggle for self-government aroused great sympathy in Kentucky and many volunteers from the State rushed to their aid. In 1836, under the command of General Sam Houston, the Texans defeated the Mexicans at San Jacinto, and captured

their general, Santa Anna. Two months later Santa Anna and his generals agreed to the independence of Texas and were released.

Texas Seeks Admission Into the Union.—Having achieved their independence, the loyal Texans now asked to be admitted as a state into the Union. This request at once brought about a heated discussion of the question of slavery. Leaders in the Northern States hotly opposed the admission of Texas. They believed this vast territory would be divided into a number of slave states and thereby increase their representative power in Congress. The Southern States generally advocated the admission of Texas to offset the increasing number of free states in the North. The question at once became a sectional one and increased the bitterness between the North and South. Calhoun and other southern leaders favored the immediate admission of Texas into the Union, while Webster, Adams and other Northern leaders opposed it. For ten years a heated debate went on, while the Northern and Southern sections of our great country grew wider apart and the “Lone Star State” waited.

Kentucky's Attitude.—The sentiment in Kentucky was divided. Many favored slavery; probably a still greater number believed in the right of any state to decide the question for itself. Henry Clay and many other Kentucky leaders opposed slavery, but objected to the admission of Texas on the ground that it would result in a war with Mexico. They were right. Mexico hated and feared the United States and had consented to the independence of Texas, on condition that it should not become a part of the United States. The

admission of Texas into the Union became an issue in every political campaign and was constantly before Congress.

Texas Enters the Union.—In 1845 Congress passed the bill for the annexation of Texas, and President Tyler signed it and sent it to that State for ratification. A dispute at once arose between Texas and Mexico over the boundary line. Texas claimed the Rio Grande and Mexico the Rio Nueces as the boundary line between them. The territory lying between these rivers at once became an object of contention between the two countries. James K. Polk, who was now President, sent General Zachary Taylor with an army to occupy the disputed territory. The Mexicans resented this act and attacked the Americans—thus the expected war began.

It is not the purpose of a history of our State to give a full account of this war, but to notice only that phase of it in which the Kentuckians had a part. The opposition to war that had existed in Kentucky until this time quickly gave way. In May, 1846, the President called for twenty-four hundred volunteers from Kentucky, and immediately more than ten thousand eagerly offered their services. Of the one hundred and five companies organized, only thirty could be accepted; the rest were disbanded. In a short time Kentucky offered about one-fourth as many men as had been called for in the entire twenty-nine States.

Governor Owsley Calls for Volunteers.—As soon as war began, Governor Owsley, without waiting for the call of the United States for troops, issued a proclamation calling for men of military age “to form themselves

into volunteer companies'' and report to him. In a few weeks the Louisville Legion under Colonel Ormsby started for the front. The Second Regiment of infantry under Colonel William R. McKee, and the First Regiment of cavalry under Colonel Humphrey Marshall, reported for immediate service. These, and a company under Captain John Williams, were accepted by the War Department. William Preston, who afterwards distinguished himself as a statesman and general, raised by subscription in Louisville, \$50,000.00 and placed it to the credit of Governor Owsley, to be used, if necessary, to pay the expenses of the Kentucky troops to the seat of war.

The eagerness with which the Kentuckians enlisted in this war showed their combative spirit as well as the sympathy they felt for the Texans who were now battling against a foreign foe. The people had enjoyed a long period of peace, and the State Militia had been poorly drilled. The organizing, drilling, and training for war prevented most of the volunteers from reaching the front until after the capture of Monterey. Colonel Marshall's Cavalry was transported by boat to Memphis. From thence they began a dreary overland march through the vast, silent wilderness of Arkansas to Port Lavaca on the coast of Texas. True to their native tastes, they indulged their passion for hunting on the way.

Capture of Monterey.—The Louisville Legion arrived just before the capture of Monterey, and while they were not engaged in any of the assaults on the fortress, they had a harder duty to perform. They were posted to guard a battery of cannon from Mexican

cavalry attacks. Thus the Kentuckians were required to stand a hot artillery fire without being able to return it. The official report of the battle says, they "displayed obedience, patience, discipline and courage." In this conflict, General William O. Butler was severely wounded and Major Philip N. Barbour was killed.

Following the capture of Monterey Captain Cassius M. Clay, who had just arrived with the First Kentucky Cavalry, was invited by General Taylor to dine with him. Writing of this in his memoirs, Clay says:

"At the hour named I entered his tent, expecting to find, at least, plenty of good things, if not great ceremony. . . . But I sat down with the plainly dressed hero before his camp-chest, and partook of salt pork,

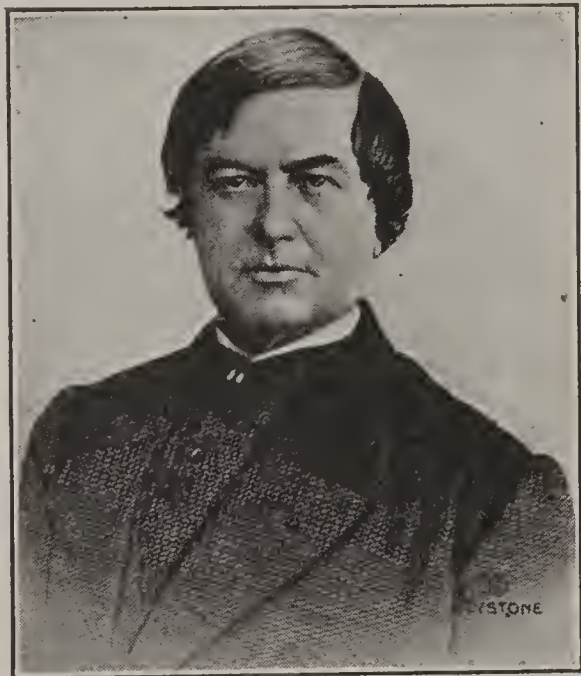
hard tack, and camp coffee." Shortly after this, Clay, at the head of a scouting party, was captured by the Mexicans. Before many days the captives met Santa Anna's army on the plains. "When we came to Santa Anna," says Captain Clay, "who was riding with his suite in a carriage drawn by six horses, with postillions, and outriders, in great style, I could but think of Taylor and his tin cups." As subsequent events will show, General Taylor, who was affectionately



GENERAL ZACHARY TAYLOR

called "Old Rough and Ready," and his little band of rugged volunteers, were more than a match for the pomp and parade of Santa Anna and his large army of trained veterans.

Battle of Buena Vista.—General Taylor had been required to send a large part of his force to General



CASSIUS M. CLAY

Winfield Scott, who was now preparing to march against Mexico City from Vera Cruz. Including the Kentucky regiments under Colonels Marshall and McKee, Taylor's entire army amounted to only about five thousand regulars and volunteers. He now learned that General Santa Anna was preparing to attack him with an army of about twenty thousand men. Rejecting the advice of the

War Department to fortify and hold Monterey, General Taylor determined to meet Santa Anna in a more favorable position, and selected Buena Vista for that purpose. The genius of "Old Rough and Ready" had chosen this strong position wisely and well. Here on the evening of February 22, the host of Mexicans attacked the American army, numbering only about one-fourth as many. Skirmishing continued until dark. At dawn of the next day the battle storm broke, and raged with doubtful results for ten hours. But the heroic little band of Americans that night slept upon

the field of victory, while the great army of Santa Anna, shattered and disheartened, retreated to San Luis Potosi. Thus ended one of the most desperate battles ever fought upon the American continent. About one-fifth of the troops were from our State, and of the 723 killed or wounded, 162 were Kentuckians. Among the slain were the gallant Colonel William R. McKee and Lieutenant Colonel Henry Clay, son of the great statesman. The Battle of Buena Vista ended the war in that quarter, and General Scott's victories and the capture of Mexico City soon afterward, forced the Mexicans to sue for peace. The company from Clark County under Captain John S. Williams, which was with General Scott, had a distinguished part in the assault on Cerro Gordo April 18, 1847.

Many young officers who took part in the Mexican War led the armies of the North and the armies of the South in the great Civil Conflict that soon followed. With General Taylor were W. T. Sherman, Braxton Bragg, Jefferson Davis, and John H. Morgan; with General Scott were R. E. Lee, U. S. Grant, Thomas J. Jackson and George B. McClellan. It is hard to believe that these brave officers who fought side by side in a common cause should face each other in the bloody Civil War that was soon to follow.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What political party was in power in Kentucky at this time? Mention some of its leaders. What opinions prevailed in Kentucky concerning slavery? Who became a leading abolitionist? Why did the question of slavery enter into the Texas Revolution and the admis-

sion of the State into the Union? What was the attitude of the Kentuckians to the Mexican War? Give a sketch of General Zachary Taylor. Describe the battles of Monterey and Buena Vista.

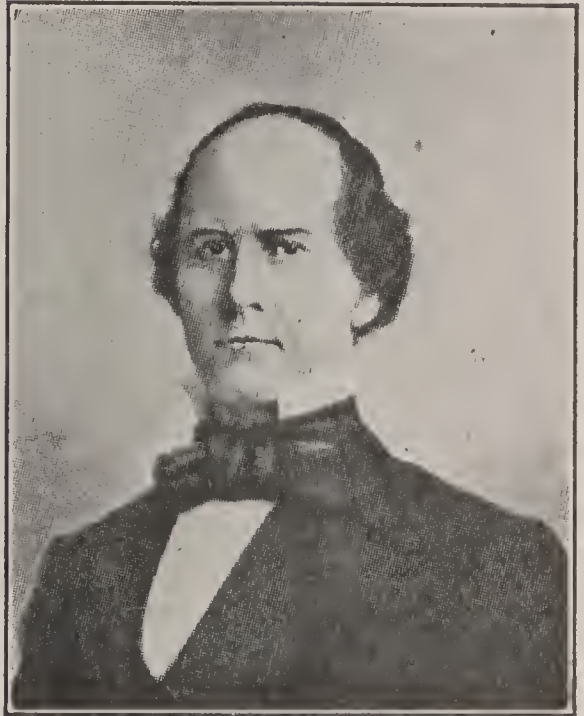
CHAPTER XXXVII

PERIOD OF UNREST

At the close of the Mexican War a desire was expressed in many quarters that "The banner now floating from the City of Mexico shall never be withdrawn." James Buchanan, Polk's Secretary of State, declared, "We must fulfill that destiny which Providence may have in store for both countries." This was at once understood to mean that the United States should annex the entire territory of Mexico. In a speech delivered at Lexington on November 13, 1847, Henry Clay gave utterance to such an eloquent argument against the annexation of Mexico as to turn the tide of sentiment in Kentucky and the Union against it. On February 2, 1848, a treaty was signed at Guadalupe Hidalgo by which the boundary between Mexico and the United States was fixed at the Rio Grande, and by which Mexico gave up her claims to California, Arizona, and New Mexico. In return, the United States agreed to pay Mexico \$15,000,000.00, and to assume the payment of all claims of American citizens against her.

The Honored Dead.—Perhaps no other people honor their heroes and heroic dead so much as the Ken-

tuckians. In 1845, Kentucky set aside a beautiful plot of ground at Frankfort as a last resting place for her distinguished dead. Many "sons of her consecrated ground" still lay "where stranger steps and tongue resound." Those who had fallen at Buena Vista were now (July 20, 1847) brought to Frankfort and buried with impressive ceremonies. At the unveiling of a monument soon afterwards erected to their memory, Theodore O'Hara read his immortal elegy. O'Hara, himself, had served in the Mexican War, and as he read these solemn lines he must have felt the thrill of his own experience and the sad rhythm of his own verse:



COLONEL THEODORE O'HARA

"The muffled drum's sad roll has beat
The soldier's last tattoo;
No more on life's parade shall meet
The brave and daring few.
On fame's eternal camping ground
Their silent tents are spread,
And Glory guards, with solemn round,
The Bivouac of the dead.

.

"The neighing steed, the flashing blade,
The trumpet's stirring blast,
The charge, the dreadful cannonade,
The din and shout are past;

No war's wild note, nor glory's peal,
Shall thrill with fierce delight
Those breasts that never more shall feel
The rapture of the fight."¹

Election of 1848.—In 1848 the Whig Party, which was still in power in Kentucky, elected John J. Crittenden Governor. At the time, Crittenden was a member of the United States Senate, but resigned, and Governor Owsley appointed Thomas Metcalfe to fill out his unexpired term. The appointment was offered to Henry Clay who refused it, probably with the hope of being made the Whig candidate for President. But the eyes of the Whigs had turned to the conquering hero of Buena Vista as the "rising star" for the Presidency. General Taylor had spent his life in camp, and had taken but little interest in political affairs. He was an ardent admirer of Clay and said he "was ready to stand aside," and expressed a sincere desire that the Whigs would make Clay the choice of the party. Taylor had come to Kentucky when a child and had that rugged, heroic spirit that Kentuckians admired. Probably the masses preferred Clay, but the campaign orators wanted "Old Rough and Ready, who never surrenders," and who had been forty years a Kentuckian. With the "Hero of Buena Vista" for their candidate the Whigs believed they could win; and so

¹ The student should read this entire poem. O'Hara was born in Danville in 1820. He served in the Mexican War under General Franklin Pierce, afterwards President of the United States. He was an officer in the Southern army and received General Albert Sidney Johnston in his arms when he fell at Shiloh. He died June 7, 1867, in Alabama, the State of his adoption. His remains rest in Frankfort Cemetery, where, twenty years before, he had read his famous elegy.

they did. Buena Vista probably made Taylor President and again defeated the life ambitions of Henry Clay.

Last Days of Henry Clay.—After his defeat for the Whig nomination for Presidency in 1848, Clay retired from public life. In February 1849, the Kentucky legislature declared “That we, the Representatives of the people of Kentucky, are opposed to abolition or emancipation of slavery in any form or shape whatever.” But the confidence of this body in Clay, who was then uttering bold arguments against slavery, is shown by his election as Senator from Kentucky by the General Assembly. Notwithstanding his age, his declining health, and his desire for the repose of private life, he accepted the election as a duty to his country. He had been bearing her burdens for forty years, but his mind was still alert and his heart was loyal, so he refused to lay his burdens down until the end of life’s journey. Though defeated for President, though burdened by the fears of a coming conflict, he returned to the Senate as the faithful servant of his State, like one “endeavoring to throw oil upon the troubled waters.”

The Omnibus Bill.—In 1850, Clay introduced into the Senate a plan “for the peace, concord, and harmony of these States, to settle . . . all existing questions . . . between them, arising out of the institution of slavery.”¹ Upon the compromise plans introduced, the old “Triumvirate,” Webster, Calhoun and Clay, joined in one of the mightiest debates ever heard in a

¹ McElroy, “Kentucky in the Nation’s History,” p. 462.

parliament of men. During these debates on the "Omnibus Bill," as Clay's plans were now called, he once exclaimed with great patriotic fervor, "Sir, I have heard something said about allegiance to the South. I know no South, no North, no East, no West, to which I owe allegiance." Clay was now no longer the Senator from Kentucky, but Senator Clay of America. But all the compromises for which he so nobly fought, and all his eloquent pleas for peace and harmony among the States, failed to avert disunion. The Omnibus Bill passed. It was a great triumph for the last days of the "Great Pacificator." A kind Providence destined that he should not witness the bloody strife that was soon to follow. His wish to die at the National Capitol, "with his harness on," was fulfilled June 29, 1852. So passed Henry Clay of America, the patriot and statesman who declared, when most ambitious for the office, "I had rather be right than be President."¹

A Tragic Episode.—The Kentucky spirit of freedom and independence is shown by an incident that occurred at this time. In August 1851, believing the patriots of Cuba were struggling for their independence, Colonel William L. Crittenden led an armed band of Kentuckians to their aid. Crittenden and his men were surprised, overpowered and captured. Most of the Americans were immediately shot. When asked to kneel with his back to the firing squad, Colonel Crittenden folded his arms across his breast and replied:

¹ The life of Henry Clay should be an inspiration to every patriot, Read it,

“A Kentuckian kneels only to his God, and always faces the enemy.”¹

“Bloody Monday.”—In 1850, Governor Crittenden became Attorney General in Filmore’s cabinet and Lieutenant Governor John L. Helm was inaugurated to fill out his unexpired term. In 1851, Lazarus W. Powell was elected Governor on the Democratic ticket, though the Whigs secured the majority of the other state offices. Cassius M. Clay headed the Emancipation ticket but received only a small vote. The Whig Party was falling to pieces. The anti-slavery element was going over to the Republican Party and the slavery advocates to the Democratic Party. During this time of extreme political feeling and the breaking up of the old Whig Party it was natural that new parties should arise. In the midst of it all came the American or No-Nothing party that cherished an unfounded and intolerant dislike for foreigners and Catholics. Many Whigs joined the Know-Nothing party, and in 1855, elected Charles S. Morehead Governor. On election day, since known as “Bloody Monday,” a groundless and violent hatred led the rough element to a mad attack on some of the Catholics in Louisville. Houses were burned and twenty-two persons were killed and many wounded. Such madness brought its own punishment; the Know-Nothing party fell into dishonor, and soon disappeared.

Election of 1856.—In the Presidential election of 1856,

¹“Take, take the life that heaven gave,
And let my heart’s blood stain thy sod,
But know ye not, Kentucky’s brave
Will kneel to none but God.”—MRS. MARY WILSON BETTS.

the Democratic Party elected John C. Breckinridge of Kentucky Vice-President and James Buchanan President. Breckinridge belonged to one of the noblest and ablest families of the State, and was well fitted for the high office to which he was elected. He was not



JOHN C. BRECKINRIDGE

only a Democrat but his sympathies were ardently Southern. In 1859 the Democrats elected Beriah Magoffin Governor and obtained a majority in both Houses of the Legislature.

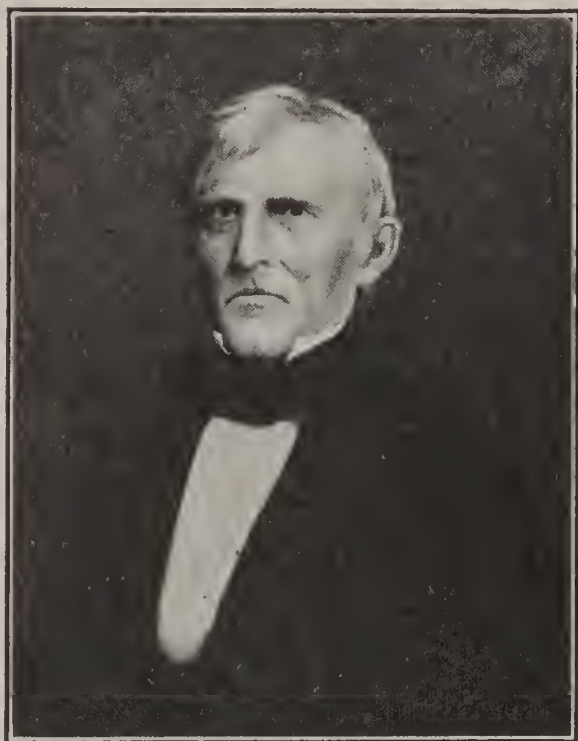
The Conservative Union Party.—However, there was a group of pure, able, and patriotic men who had belonged to the Whig Party, who now called themselves the Conservative Union Party. This group included men like Joseph R. Underwood, W. B. Kinkead, Joshua Bell, James Guthrie, George D. Pren-

tice, and John J. Crittenden. These and other distinguished Kentuckians saw our country falling to pieces and strove with manly courage to avert war and save the Union. The Conservative Union Party placed loyalty to the Union above party allegiance and sought a peaceable settlement of all differences between the North and South within the Union and not outside of it.

Revising the Constitution.—In the midst of the intense feelings in 1849 a vote was taken in the State for calling a convention to revise the State Constitution. The question of the emancipation of slaves entered into the bitter campaign that followed. The results showed almost a solid delegation for the pro-slavery party. The convention met, but made only a few slight changes in the provisions affecting slavery. The State was heavily in debt, and the power of the Legislature to raise money on the credit of the State was abolished. The power of the Governor to appoint the judges, attorneys, magistrates, and clerks of the State courts was now made elective by the people. Further provisions were made by which no convention could be called to revise the Constitution except by a two-thirds vote of the people. The Constitution thus revised, at a time of intense excitement, outlived, by many years, the institution of slavery which it protected.

Kentucky's Loyalty.—Notwithstanding the strong pro-slavery feeling in the State the people were loyal to the Union and bitterly opposed secession. They adhered to the doctrine of States' rights, and their sympathies were with the South, but they were not unmindful of their duty to the Union. An act of the Legislature in 1850, strikingly illustrates the intense loyalty of that time. On a block of Kentucky marble, to be used in the Washington Monument at Washington City, was ordered to be engraved: "Under the auspices of heaven and the precepts of Washington, Kentucky will be the last to give up the Union." True to the pledge engraven upon stone and cherished in

the hearts of her people, Kentucky remained through the coming conflict under the national banner. Though rent asunder by the bloody strife, though her



JOHN J. CRITTENDEN

sons fought alike under the stars and stripes and under the stars and bars the old Commonwealth pled for peace, but stayed in the Union.

From 1619, when the little Dutch trading vessel sold twenty slaves to the Jamestown colony, till now, was a far cry. In spite of all efforts at a settlement of the vexing question, it refused to be settled. In spite of the Great Pacificator, now

dead; and, in spite of the able gray-haired Crittenden, now pleading in Congress for a peaceable settlement of a question, centuries old, the war cloud continued to gather.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What did the United States gain by the Mexican War? How did Kentucky honor her dead soldiers who fell in battle? What was the result of the election of 1848? Give an account of the last days of Henry Clay. Why was Clay called the "Great Pacificator"? What brought about "Bloody Monday"? Give the results of the election of 1856. What changes were made in the Constitution by the convention of 1849? What incident occurred at this time that showed the loyalty of Kentucky to the Union?

CHAPTER XXXVIII

KENTUCKY'S LOYALTY TO THE UNION

THE ownership of slaves as private property is an age-old custom. It has existed in most civilized countries, but always contrary to the wish of many of the people. Slavery had been planted on American soil shortly after its settlement and had spread to every part of the country. In 1860, there were about three and a half million slaves in the United States, representing a property value of about one and a half billion dollars. The Declaration of Independence affirms that all men by nature are equal and have certain rights, and that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness. In the light of these principles it seems strange that slavery should have existed in our free government, and that America should have been among the last of civilized nations to give it up. It should be remembered, however, that the right to own property was also guaranteed to every citizen, and that slaves were considered property.

Slavery in the South.—For two centuries slavery had prevailed, though there had been many who opposed it. Slave labor was found more profitable in the production of rice, sugar, and cotton in the South than in the industries of the North, so it came about that most of the slaves were gradually sold to Southern

planters. The drift of the slaves from the North to the South was the chief cause that brought about the division of our country into *free* and *slave* states. Aside from the question of right and wrong, it was an industrial question that grew out of natural conditions. Believing the slaves to be lawful property, and that the ownership of them was necessary to the development of the South, the slaveholder refused to give up his right to own them.

States' Rights.—Another question as old as the Constitution was whether a state had the right to withdraw from the Union and set up independent statehood. It was the old States' Rights question, fought over by the Federalists and Anti-Federalists seventy years before, and had since been brought up many times by Northern and Southern States alike. The reader must keep before him these questions of Slavery and States' Rights to properly understand the causes of the impending conflict. To settle them happily required calm thought, sober temper, and a deep patriotic purpose. There were many fanatics in the North and many fanatics in the South who had none of these qualities. The fire-eaters of the North made false charges against the South, and the people of the North believed them; the fire-eaters of the South made false charges against the people of the North, and the people of the South believed them. This misunderstanding of one section by another so widened the gulf between them as to make peace impossible.

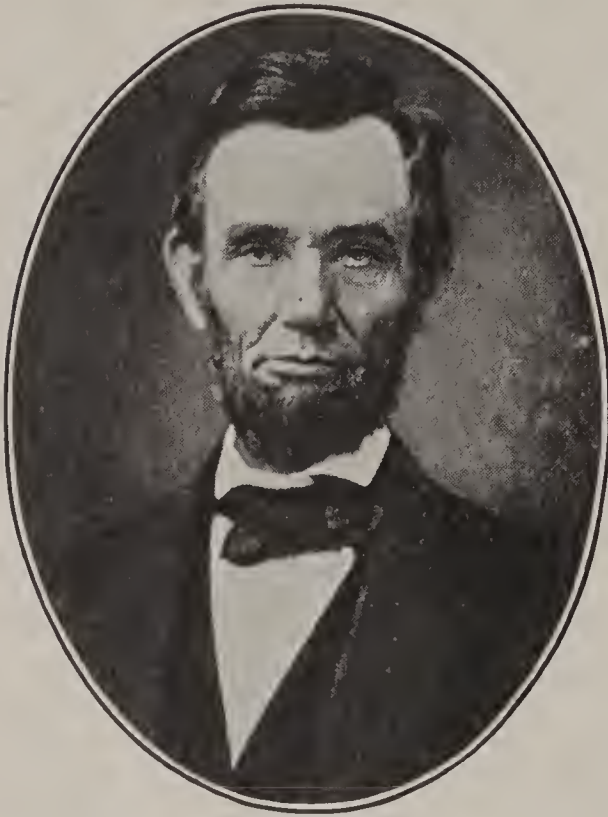
The Breach Widens.—The fate of Kentucky and every State in the Union, and the destiny of the Union itself,

were trembling in the balance. In many cases reason gave place to passion and all hope of compromising the troubles vanished. Scenes of violence took place in the halls of Congress and all political issues vanished, except those of slavery and secession. Families became divided, schools disorganized, and even churches were split on the questions.

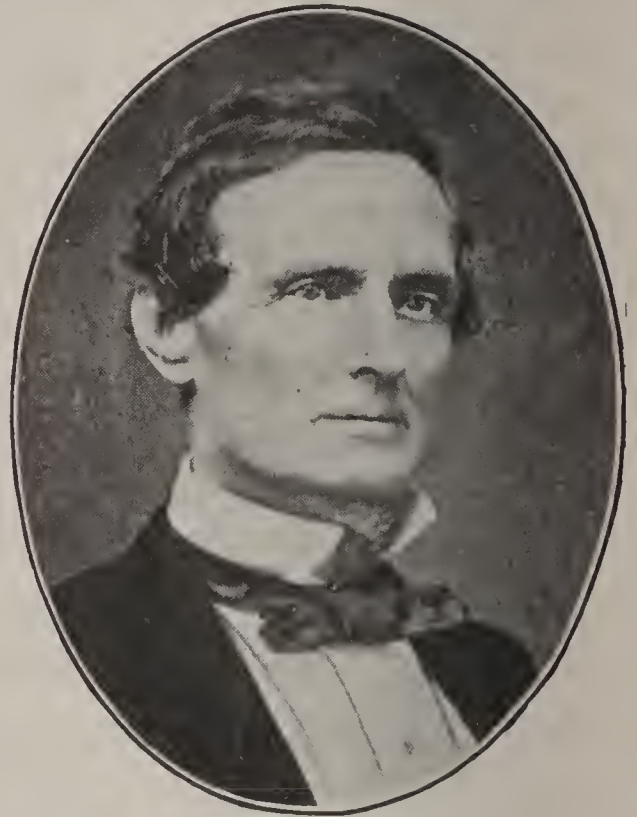
Attitude of Kentucky.—Clay, Crittenden, and other great pacificators had cried “Peace! Peace!” while our great country drifted toward war. In Kentucky the lines were sharply drawn, but the mantle of the Great Pacificator had fallen upon Crittenden and the people. Though a slave State, having kinship and sympathies with the South, Kentucky refused to leave the Union. She had struggled long to enter the Union, she had fought in three wars for the Union, and had been the first State west of the Alleghenies to enter the Union. But recently she had declared she would be the last to give up the Union, and though her efforts to remain in it, and her declarations of neutrality called forth unjust criticisms from the North and the South, she stood heroically by her pledges and principles. From the beginning of the quarrel, and through the years of bitter strife, her plea for peace was an unheeded voice. History does not have a parallel in the wise and righteous course she endeavored to pursue. Let the flippant critic from afar find fault with her hesitation, her indecision, and her mistakes; but let him remember, too, that the slave State of Kentucky stood alone for the Union among her sister states of the South.

By a strange sort of fate, the leader of the North

and the leader of the South were born on Kentucky soil that was now endeavoring to remain neutral.



ABRAHAM LINCOLN



JEFFERSON DAVIS

Abraham Lincoln was born in a log cabin in Larue County, Kentucky, February 12, 1809. His parents were poor, and "Abe," as he was called, attended school but a short time. While he was yet a boy his parents moved to Indiana and shortly afterwards to Illinois. The boy helped to build a cabin, clear the ground and split rails to fence it. He was six feet four inches in height, angular, awkward, and a giant in strength. He was fond of reading the best books and probably failed as a merchant because he gave more time to his books than to his business. He was kind, generous, and full of droll anecdotes. Lincoln opposed slavery, became a great admirer of Henry Clay, and himself a great political leader. He was elected President of the United States in 1860. He stands alone in originality, greatness, and goodness among the world's great men.

Jefferson Davis was born in Todd County, Kentucky, June 3, 1808, and in his infancy his father moved southward to Mississippi and became a thrifty cotton planter. After attending a private school for a time, he was sent to Transylvania University, Lexington, Kentucky, for several years, and finally to West Point Military Academy, from which

he graduated. Davis was a man of military tastes, and took a distinguished part in the Mexican War. He married the daughter of Zachary Taylor. He was a great student of history and government, and an ardent follower of Calhoun. He became the leader of southern political ideals, and was a member of the United States Senate when the Civil War began. In February, 1861, he became President of the Southern Confederacy. He was a man of high moral and religious principles, sincere and honest in his belief in slavery and the cause of the South. He deplored war between the States, but when it came he resigned his seat in the Senate and became leader of the Confederacy.

The Lincoln and Davis families belonged to the restless settler-folk. About 1812, two tides of emigrants were moving from Kentucky; one North, and the other South. The Lincolns followed the northern thrust, and finally settled in Illinois, where they came under the influence of the ideals of a free non-slaveholding people. The Davises went South and came under the influence of the ideals and customs of the slaveholding cotton planters. Abraham Lincoln and Jefferson Davis each fell under the social, economic, and political influence of the State in which he grew up. Lincoln abhorred slavery; Davis believed it to be right, and necessary to Southern agriculture. Who can say what might have been the result if Lincoln had gone South, and Davis, North?

Union or Disunion?—In January, 1861, a member of Congress from each of the Border States met in Washington to frame compromise resolutions. Crittenden accepted the compromises but the resolutions failed. In Kentucky, earnest speakers urged the people to be patient and moderate in their actions. They declared that "Secession means revolution, and revolution means war." They expressed sympathy for the South, but advised the people to be loyal to the Union.

The Legislature met in a called session, January 17, 1861, and Governor Magoffin urged it to call a State convention to decide the future attitude toward the Federal Government. Vice-President Breckinridge and other Democratic leaders favored the call, but leaders of the Union party opposed it; for, they said, if the question be now submitted to the people, the hot temper of the times might lead the State to secede. After many earnest speeches on both sides, the Legislature adjourned without calling a convention. It held another session in March, but nothing of importance was done. On this occasion, John J. Crittenden addressed the Assembly and made an eloquent plea for the Union, urging the members "never to consider the question of dissolution." A few days later, John C. Breckinridge addressed the Assembly on the Cause of the South, and pled for peace if this could be secured without sacrificing the rights and privileges of the Southern people.

Loyalty to the Union.—During the presidential campaign in 1860, there was but one main issue before the American voter—Union or Secession. There were four national tickets in the field, three of which stood for Union and one anti-Union. The total vote on the three Union tickets in Kentucky showed that in spite of Kentucky's leaning to slavery and her sympathy for the South, the majority of her people were loyal to the Union. Kentucky was democratic at heart, but placed loyalty to the Federal Government above party spirit. The Lincoln and Hamlin ticket received only 1,366 votes in Kentucky but it was elected in the country at large.

Secession.—Lincoln had said, “I believe this government cannot endure half slave and half free,” and that “A house divided against itself cannot stand.” Many Southern leaders believed that Lincoln would endeavor to free the slaves, and declared that if he should be elected the Southern States would secede. South Carolina was the first to carry out the threat. December 17, 1860, she passed a Secession Ordinance, and within a short time six other Southern States followed her out of the Union. The fatal step had been taken, and events now marched rapidly to a bloody conflict. A peace conference of twenty-one States assembled at Washington February 4, 1861, and on the same day delegates from the seceded States met at Montgomery, Alabama, to set up a government for the Confederate States. At this time Jefferson Davis was elected President.

Inauguration of Lincoln.—March 4, Abraham Lincoln was inaugurated President of the United States.¹ In his inaugural address, he said to the South, “In your hands, my dissatisfied countrymen, and not in mine,

¹ No other President has ever entered office under such trying conditions. No other President was ever so misunderstood. Even the press of his own party sneered at his trip to Washington as the “grand cavalcade” of “Simple Susan.” One headline—“Old Abe Kissed a Pretty Girl”—ridiculed a tender act of the homely great-hearted man. Numerous threats were made against his life by violent enemies, and the appointed time of his arrival in Washington was changed to avoid a threatening mob at Baltimore. The practiced politicians of the day wagged their heads doubtingly and even his own Cabinet mistrusted him as a leader. All were soon to learn that Nature had out

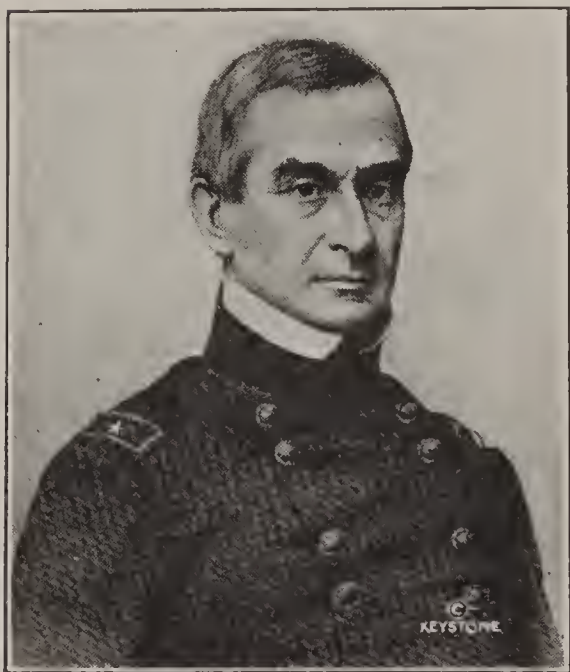
“Of the unexhausted West

With stuff untainted shaped a hero new.”

Fate had chosen a rugged nobleman and brought him forward for a great task.

is the momentous issue of civil war. . . . We are not enemies, but friends. We must not be enemies. Though passion may have strained, it must not weaken the bond of affection." In vain the noble heart of the great Kentuckian strove to avert war and save the Union.

The Fall of Fort Sumpter.—At four o'clock on the morning of April 12, 1861, a ten-inch shell rose high in the air from a Confederate battery in Charleston harbor and burst over Fort Sumpter. It was "the



GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON,
U. S. A.

first gun of the war" between the States, and for four years its solemn echoes resounded through a once peaceful land. Kentucky had furnished the leader of the North and the leader of the South, and she now furnished an officer to order the firing of the first shot in defense of the flag of the Union. The grave responsibility of this act fell upon Major Robert Anderson,

who was in command of Fort Sumpter. Anderson and his heroic little band had abandoned all other forts in the harbor. General Beauregard, the Confederate commander, now demanded the evacuation of Fort Sumpter. Anderson refused, and the bombardment began. For three hours Anderson waited before returning the fire. Within thirty hours

the fort was battered to pieces and set on fire by hot shot, and compelled to surrender. General Beauregard granted to Anderson and his weary, powder-blackened little band generous terms of surrender, and showed them those acts of kindness a brave man always extends to a fallen foe. It is said that with the fall of Fort Sumpter, "A thrill went through the whole city" of Charleston, but that "thrill" let loose a brood of national horrors. Further debate was now closed. The die was cast. That first shot hurled a united North against a united South for four years.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

How long had slavery existed in the United States? Why did most of the slaves drift to the Southern States? What is the "States' Rights" question? Why did the breach between the North and South continue to widen? What was the attitude of Kentucky to slavery and secession? Sketch the lives of Abraham Lincoln and Jefferson Davis. What was the main issue before the people in the election of 1860? What was Lincoln's attitude to slavery? Who became President of the Confederacy? Tell the story of the fall of Fort Sumpter.

CHAPTER XXXIX

KENTUCKY'S NEUTRALITY

IMMEDIATELY after the fall of Fort Sumpter President Lincoln issued a call for troops. When he asked for four regiments from Kentucky, Governor Magoffin replied: "In answer, I say, emphatically, Kentucky will furnish no troops for the wicked purpose of subduing her sister Southern States." Although the Governor sympathized strongly with the South he

likewise refused to furnish troops to the Confederate States. The Union men of Kentucky now braced themselves in one united effort to secure the neutrality of the State. Again the aged and tireless Crittenden threw his mighty influence into the balance against war, and if war must come, that Kentucky should remain true to the Union and stand in her place as a peacemaker. April 17, 1861, he made an eloquent speech to a large assembly of the people at Lexington in which he advised them “not to be forced into civil strife for the North, nor dragged into it for the South—to take no part with either.”¹ Many other meetings were held throughout the State, and everywhere a desire for neutrality was expressed. Let the reader keep in mind that while the people of Kentucky were ardently Southern in sentiment, they just as ardently supported the Union and opposed war. They shuddered at war between the kindred people of the States, and strove in a noble and manly way to prevent it. The Democrats believed in the right of a state to secede whenever its constitutional liberties were denied it. The native Kentuckian harked back to his ancestral sires who settled the wilderness and laid the foundation of a free state. He guarded his personal liberties with jealous care, hence, many who believed in the right of secession flew to arms in aid of the South.

Pleas for Peace.—Following the fall of Fort Sumpter, great excitement prevailed throughout the Union. The North and South were rapidly arming for the mad conflict. In the midst of his trying position, Governor

¹ Collins, I, p. 87.

Magoffin called a session of the Legislature to meet May 6. Immediately upon assembling, petitions began to pour in from the women of the State—"Mothers, Wives, Sisters, Daughters of Kentucky," asking the Assembly to "guard them from the direful calamity of civil war, by allowing Kentucky to maintain inviolate her armed neutrality."¹ The Unionist members of the Assembly favored "mediating neutrality," a position friendly to the North and South alike. Crittenden had urged them to hold fast to the flag and adhere to a position of neutrality which would enable them to mediate for peace between the warring sections. The delay caused by the declaration of neutrality only put off the bloody conflict within her border, but it also probably held Kentucky in the Union.

Acts of Neutrality.—At a legislative conference of the Unionist leaders and representative men from the Breckinridge Southern Rights party it was agreed that "Six Arbiters" should be appointed, and that the Legislature would carry out whatever the arbiters should agree to recommend. On May 16, 1861, the House of Representatives adopted the report of the Committee on Federal Relations which set forth, "That this State and the citizens thereof should take no part in the civil war now being waged except as mediators and friends of the belligerent parties; and that Kentucky should, during the contest, occupy the position of strict neutrality." It was further resolved "That the act of the Governor, in refusing to furnish

¹ Collins, Vol. I, p. 89. The position of "armed neutrality" called for State troops to act as guards to prevent either the armies of the North or of the South from invading Kentucky.

troops or military force upon the call of the executive authority of the United States, under existing circumstances, is approved.”¹ Before adjournment the Senate passed similar resolutions. Thus the policy of neutrality was adopted by both houses of the General Assembly. On May 20, Governor Magoffin issued a proclamation warning all other States, especially the United States and the Confederate States, against invading or occupying any place whatever within the boundary of Kentucky. The Legislature directed that State troops be organized and armed, and that money be raised for this purpose. It further declared that neither the arms nor the militia were to be used “against the Government of the United States, nor against the Confederate States, unless in protecting our soil from unlawful invasion.”²

Mention has been made of only a few of the important steps that were taken by the leaders in Kentucky at this time to prevent strife. Had the other states tried as earnestly to avert war and hold the Union together, the troublous questions might have been settled peaceably. But such is the weakness of human reason, and the strength of human passion and prejudice, that it is probable that war, with all of its violence, had to come. The age-old question of slavery had to be settled, and perhaps it was necessary for our great country to pass through the blood and fire of battle “in order to form a more perfect union” and to “insure domestic tranquillity” in the years to follow.

¹ Collins, Vol. I, p. 90.

² *Ibid.*, Vol. I, p. 91.

Kentucky and the Federal Government.—Governor Magoffin appointed General Simon Bolivar Buckner Inspector-General of Kentucky State Guards, General Scott Brown Adjutant General, and M. D. West Quartermaster General. The military preparations for the defense of her border, and the declarations of neutrality she had made, attracted the attention of the officials of the Federal Government. Early in June, General George B. McClellan, commander of the Union troops north of the Ohio, asked General Buckner to meet him in Cincinnati for a conference concerning the affairs in Kentucky. After some discussion in which others present took part, General McClellan agreed not to violate the neutral rights of the State, provided it would enforce the laws and protect the property of the United States within its border. Believing that President Lincoln would endorse General McClellan's action, Governor Magoffin sent General Buckner and John J. Crittenden to Washington to explain to the President what had been done. Lincoln expressed a desire to avoid sending troops into Kentucky, and agreed to recognize the wishes of her people, but refused to say anything that would thereafter embarrass him in what he might deem to be his duty. The President made it clear to Messrs.



SIMON BOLIVAR BUCKNER,
C. S. A.

Buckner and Crittenden that he was unwilling for Kentucky, as a part of the Union, to assume the right to take a neutral position, but that he was willing, as a peace policy, to respect their wishes. Probably he foresaw that it would be impossible for Kentucky to remain neutral throughout the conflict, and “was exceedingly tenderfooted” on making promises that were not constitutional and that he might not be able to keep.¹

The Results of Elections.—When the special session of Congress met July 4, 1862, at the call of President Lincoln, many a chair in the House and Senate was vacant. These representatives of the Southern States were now away rallying under the “stars and bars,” preparing to settle by an appeal to arms questions that Congress had failed to solve by ways of peace and reason. The call of the special session of Congress made it necessary to hold a congressional election in Kentucky. Union candidates and Southern Rights candidates were nominated. In the election held June 20, nine of the ten congressmen elected were Union men. The popular majority in the State was large, showing that the people of Kentucky were opposed to secession. Among those elected was the trusted and venerable Crittenden, whose influence and intense patriotism was one cause of the overwhelming majority throughout the State.

August 5, 1861, an election of members of the State Legislature was held. This time the majority vote was still larger, resulting in the election of one hun-

¹ For a full and interesting account of these conferences see McElroy, “Kentucky in the Nation’s History,” p. 535 *et seq.*

dred and three Unionists to the House and Senate, against thirty-five of the opposing party. The reader should bear in mind that war was on in earnest, that the battle of Bull Run had been fought two weeks prior to this election, and that the issues between the North and South were now clearly drawn. So, the results of these elections could have but one meaning—Kentucky's increasing loyalty to the Union.

Events were now rushing to a climax. Already on April 22, companies of troops had organized in the State and marched off to the aid of the Confederacy.¹ Early in September, 1861, Confederate troops occupied and fortified strong positions at Hickman and Columbus in the southwest, and near Cumberland Gap in the southeastern part of the State. Immediately following these invasions General U. S. Grant entered Kentucky with a large Union force and occupied Paducah. The Legislature promptly ordered the United States flag to be unfurled over the capitol. Such an act could leave no further doubt concerning the Union sentiment of the General Assembly. Governor Magoffin requested President Lincoln and President Davis each to withdraw their troops from Kentucky, but each declined to do so, except on conditions that were not acceptable. September 11, resolutions were passed by the Legislature instructing Governor Magoffin to require all Confederate troops to be withdrawn from Kentucky soil, *unconditionally*. The Governor vetoed the resolutions, and the Assembly passed them over his veto. The Governor then issued

¹ Collins, Vol. I, p. 88.

the required proclamation, but the Confederate forces refused to obey the order.

Neutrality Abandoned.—On September 18, the Legislature passed resolutions to expel the Confederate troops, and provided that General Robert Anderson, who was in command of the Federal forces on the Cumberland, be given authority to call out a volunteer force in Kentucky for that purpose. It was further resolved that “no citizen shall be molested on account of his political opinions; that no citizen’s property shall be taken . . . nor shall any slave be set free.” That “the fullest protection of the government” shall be given to “all peaceable citizens and their families.” The resolutions further provided that the military force of the State be placed under the command of General Thomas Crittenden. The resolutions appealed “to the patriotism of every Kentuckian,” who was “confidently relied upon to give active aid in the defense of the Commonwealth.” Magoffin likewise vetoed these resolutions, which were promptly passed over his veto, and the same day he issued the proclamation.¹ It must be clear to the reader that by these acts Kentucky had officially abandoned her position of neutrality.

We who now look back upon the happenings of those stormy days can see that in the midst of the mad conflict it was impossible for the State to maintain a neutral position. Kentucky continued to cling to her ideas of personal liberty; she abandoned neutrality, but stayed in the Union.

¹ Collins, Vol. I, p. 93.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What was Governor Magoffin's reply to Lincoln and Davis' call for troops? What position did Kentucky endeavor to take in the war? What efforts were made to keep Kentucky out of the conflict? What did the "Six Arbiters" do? Define Governor Magoffin's attitude to the war. For what purpose were the State Guards organized? What were the results of the elections in 1861 and 1862? Describe the peace efforts of John J. Crittenden. By what acts did Kentucky officially abandon her neutrality?

CHAPTER XL

THE CIVIL WAR

As soon as she abandoned her neutral position, Kentucky at once became the pawn of the North and the South. Being a border State she became the recruiting ground and the battlefield of both the Union and Confederate armies, and for four years suffered all the woes of her unfortunate position. It will be neither pleasant nor profitable for the reader to dwell upon the awful destruction of life and property that followed. The story of the bloody tragedy has been told many times, and may be read in larger histories of our country; hence, our account of Kentucky's part in one of the greatest civil wars in history will be brief.

Breaking Up of the State Guard.—The State Guard which had been equipped and trained for home protection, now broke up. Many of the troops laid down

their arms, others took theirs with them and went South to join General Buckner, now in command of a Confederate army. Others remained under General Thomas Crittenden, a Union officer of the State Guard. Back in July, General Lloyd Tilghman had resigned from the State Guard and led away a Kentucky regiment to join the Confederate army. Captain John Hunt Morgan, afterwards the famous Kentucky cavalry raider, soon joined General Buckner who was now stationed at Bowling Green with orders to invade Kentucky. With Captain Morgan, who was also an officer of the State Guard, went most of his company, the "Lexington Rifles," all carrying their guns. The attitude of the State Guard had caused the Unionists grave fear, for it was known that most of its officers and men sympathized with the South.

The Home Guards.—A reserve force known as the Home Guards, consisting chiefly of Union men, had been organized. They were irregular troops, poorly equipped and disciplined and were sometimes guilty of unwise conduct. In their zeal for the Union cause they arrested numerous persons who were known to sympathize with the Confederacy. Ex-Governor Morehead, Colonel Reuben T. Durrett, editor of the *Louisville Courier*, and James B. Clay were among the prominent men who were arrested and sent to prison. The Legislature strongly condemned such unjustifiable arrests, and General Anderson issued a proclamation against such acts, and promised protection to the people. The State was now threatened with invasion by Confederate armies, and it was greatly distracted by petty and sometimes bloody riots.

The "Lincoln Guns."—President Lincoln had been notified of every step that had been taken, and was watching the affairs of his native State with fear, and with sympathetic interest. Early in May, 1861, Lieutenant William Nelson, himself a Kentuckian, induced the President to furnish arms to equip Union troops in the State. Accordingly five thousand muskets were shipped to Cincinnati, and from thence they were distributed to Union camps in and near Kentucky. This shipment of "Lincoln guns," as they were called, aroused the anger of those who sympathized with the Confederacy, but it awakened the enthusiasm of the Home Guards and the Union leaders.



GENERAL WILLIAM NELSON,
U. S. A.

Recruiting Camps.—By the 5th of August, General William Nelson had established a camp in Garrard County for recruiting Union troops in Kentucky. In reply to Governor Magoffin's charge that this was a violation of the neutrality of the State, President Lincoln said that this force consisted entirely of Kentuckians recruited in the vicinity of their own homes, and therefore he refused to remove them. This recruiting station, which was known as Camp Dick Robinson, became a strong and important rallying and training post for Union troops. About the same time

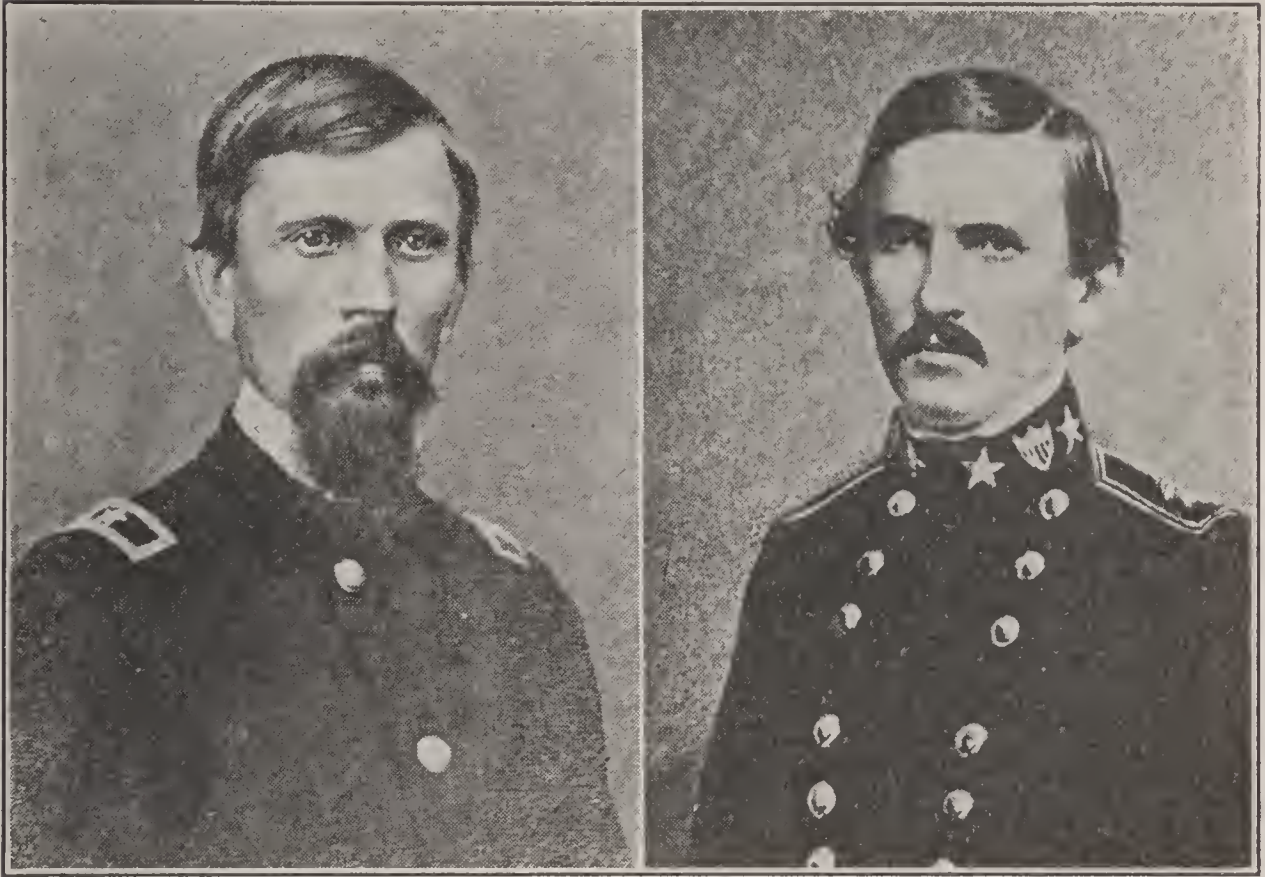
General Humphrey Marshall was enlisting and training Confederate troops at a camp in Owen County. Thus rallying and recruiting went on for the Union and for the Confederacy, while each watched the other with a jealous eye. September 18, the State Legislature directed Governor Magoffin to call out forty thousand troops to expel Confederate invaders from Kentucky. General Robert Anderson was requested to take instant command of these troops.

First Battles in Kentucky.—So far there had been no battles save minor skirmishes, but on October 21, a hot fight occurred between the Federal troops under Colonel T. T. Garrard and the Confederates under General Felix Zollicoffer, in which the Confederates were defeated. This battle took place at Camp Wild Cat in the rugged forest-covered hills of Rockcastle County. Shortly afterwards Union troops under General William Nelson defeated another body of Confederates at Ivy Mountain in Pike County.

A House Divided Against Itself.—These conflicts on Kentucky soil added fuel to the war flame already burning. Many state officials resigned to join the Confederate army, and their places were filled by Union men. John C. Breckinridge left his seat in the United States Senate in September to take command of the First Kentucky Brigade of the Confederate army, and the legislature elected Garrett Davis to succeed him.¹ The roads were now thronged with

¹ On October 2, the General Assembly asked for the resignation of Senators Breckinridge and Powell since they “do not represent the will of the people.” Collins, Vol. I, p. 95. December 2, the U. S. Senate ordered that since John C. Breckinridge “has joined the enemies of his

hurrying volunteers eager to cast their fortunes with their kinsmen of the South. About ten thousand Kentuckians joined the Confederate army within a few months. Still larger numbers just as eagerly gathered under Federal leaders in defense of the Union. The



THOMAS L. CRITTENDEN, U. S. A. GEORGE B. CRITTENDEN, C. S. A.
· Brothers who fought on opposing sides.

best blood of Kentucky, the noble sons of pioneer fathers who had laid the foundations of the State, were marshalled under opposing banners. Families were divided against each other. Even the sons of the noble John J. Crittenden, the great patriot and peacemaker, fought on opposing sides. General country and is now in arms against the Government'' that ''the traitor Breckinridge be expelled.'' Collins, Vol. I, p. 97.

Thomas Crittenden led the blue of the North against the gray of the South marshalled under his brother, General George B. Crittenden. During the war, it sometimes happened that beloved sons of the same household were sent home, one wrapped in the stars and bars, the other in the stars and stripes, to rest side by side in an eternal peace in the old family burying ground.

A great sorrow had fallen upon the land. Strong men who had pled for peace now wept over the woes that had overtaken their beloved State.¹ Among the distinguished Kentuckians who became leaders of the Union forces, were Generals Robert Anderson, William Nelson, Thomas L. Crittenden, Cassius M. Clay, Edward H. Hobson, Lovell H. Rousseau, Speed S. Fry, Green Clay Smith, and T. T. Garrard. Some of those who became distinguished leaders of Confederate armies were General Albert Sidney Johnston, Simon B. Buckner, John B. Hood, John C. Breckinridge, John H. Morgan, Ben Hardin Helm, William Preston, Humphrey Marshall, and George B. Crittenden. The ablest men of Kentucky lined up on opposing sides to lead into a deadly grapple the finest bodies of soldiers the world has ever seen.²

A Strange Episode.—The secession element, realizing that the State had refused to leave the Union, and desiring to unite it with the Confederacy, called a “sovereignty convention” to meet at Russellville, No-

¹ See Shaler, “Kentucky,” p. 254 *et seq.*

² A table of measurements of soldiers of the Civil War shows that the average height of the Kentucky soldiers exceeded New England troops nearly one inch, and likewise exceeded them in girth of chest and head. See Shaler, “Kentucky,” p. 372 *et seq.*

vember 18, to form a "provisional government." This singular assembly met and passed a declaration of independence and an ordinance of secession. Delegates were sent to the Confederate Congress at Richmond. George W. Johnson was chosen Governor and the usual state officers were elected. Bowling Green



BOMBARDMENT OF FORT DONELSON

was selected as the seat of government, and on December 10, following, the Confederate Congress went through the form of admitting Kentucky to membership in the Confederacy. Nothing, however, came of this little episode. The "provisional government" soon left the State with the Southern army under General Johnston. At no time was Kentucky under the control of a civil government of the Confederacy.

Battle of Mill Springs.—Confederate armies now occupied strong military positions along the southern and western borders of the State and were eager to invade

it. January 19, 1862, Union troops under General George H. Thomas defeated an invading Confederate force under General Zollicoffer at Mill Springs in Pulaski County. General Zollicoffer was killed, and his troops were driven into Tennessee.

Fall of Forts Henry and Donelson.—Beginning February 6, in a ten days' campaign, General Grant compelled the surrender of Fort Henry on the Tennessee, and Fort Donelson on the Cumberland River. Generals Floyd and Pillow left General S. B. Buckner in command of Fort Donelson and with a few troops escaped on the night of the third day of its siege. At daybreak the next morning when the Union forces were about to renew the attack, General Buckner asked for terms of surrender. To this request Grant replied, "No terms except unconditional and immediate surrender can be accepted." This incident led popular fancy afterwards to call the great silent warrior, U. S. Grant, "Unconditional Surrender" Grant. General Buckner declared Grant's demand ungenerous; but when the prisoners were permitted to keep their personal baggage, and the officers their side arms, he expressed his thanks for such generous treatment.¹ About twelve thousand Confederate prisoners were surrendered at the fall of Fort Donelson. This campaign broke the long Confederate line and caused the hasty retreat of General Johnston and his Confederate army from Bowling Green. A large Federal army under General Don Carlos Buell followed the re-

¹ This act made the two generals lifelong friends. Years afterward General Buckner aided Grant when he was overtaken by financial troubles. When Grant died, General Buckner was a pallbearer at his funeral.

treating Confederates southward and took possession of Nashville.

The Battle of Shiloh.—On April 6, 1862, General Grant's army was attacked and defeated by the Confederates under General Albert Sidney Johnston at Shiloh, or Pittsburg Landing, Tennessee. The next day heavy re-enforcements under General Buell arrived, and the second battle of Shiloh was fought, ending in the defeat and rout of the Confederate army. Many Kentuckians fought on both sides and a total of about twelve hundred of them were killed. It was in this battle that the Kentucky poet, O'Hara, caught in his arms his fallen General, Albert Sidney Johnston, who was killed in the first day's fight. This was one of the bloodiest battles of the war.

Kentucky was now under the complete control of the Federal army, but the Union Victories in the West were more than offset by defeats in the East. The National Government was beset by many troublesome questions. Now that war between the States was in progress, most of the Northern leaders were demanding the freedom of all slaves. However, many Union men were opposed to such a course, especially those in the border states who had supported the Government. Many of the leaders of the Union cause in Kentucky were large slaveholders, and while President Lincoln was opposed to slavery he did not wish to offend any loyal adherents to the Government, or to violate his constitutional authority.

The Slaves Freed in District of Columbia.—In April, 1862, slavery was abolished by Congress in the District of Columbia. Crittenden and other Kentucky

statesmen in Congress opposed the measure, for they saw in it the doom of slavery, and rightly reasoned that it was the beginning of the freedom of all slaves. The Kentuckians still contended, as they had from the first, that the individual and the State should be permitted to decide the question for themselves. This act of Congress and the military policy adopted by the Government, by which Kentucky was placed under martial law, aroused much anger and resentment.

Martial Law Declared.—General Jeremiah T. Boyle was made commandant in Kentucky in 1862, and a Provost Marshal was appointed for each county. Orders were issued requiring any who had given aid and sympathy to the Confederacy to take oath of allegiance to the Union, and all who hereafter should give aid and comfort to the enemy should be arrested and dealt with according to military law. The oath contained the printed warning, “The penalty for violating this oath is death.” It was natural that such an order should offend those who sympathized with the Confederacy, but it must be remembered that it was a war measure and that it did not violate the customs of civilized warfare. In some cases the order was abused and cruelly applied, but General Boyle showed as much leniency as possible. His orders were from Edwin M. Stanton, the merciless Secretary of War, and, as an officer, his duty was to obey. The reign of martial law in the State maddened the baser class and provoked them to many crimes against peaceful citizens.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What effect did the abandonment of neutrality have upon the war in Kentucky? Describe the breaking up of the State Guards. Who were the Home Guards? What were the "Lincoln guns"? Describe the first battle fought in Kentucky. What was the effect of the divided sentiment for the North and South? Give an account of the "sovereignty convention" that met in Russellville. Describe the Battle of Mill Springs, the fall of Fort Donelson and the Battle of Shiloh. What was the first step taken by the Government toward freeing the slaves? What was the effect of martial law in Kentucky?

CHAPTER XLI

THE SECOND INVASION OF KENTUCKY

MORGAN'S CAVALRY RAIDS

IF the reader will bear in mind the character of the Kentucky people, their love of freedom of thought and independent action, and how they opposed all laws that threatened their personal liberty, he will readily understand the resentment that the Federal martial law aroused. The loyal Union people submitted, in the belief that it was a necessary war measure, and that it was not the object of the Government to invade their rights. Some of the Provost Marshals made it a pretext for arresting their enemies and seizing their property for the slightest cause. "The people of a district or county fared well or ill, according to the character of the petty local provost in

authority.”¹ Upon the whole, however, the laws were enforced with justice and moderation, and were probably necessary to protect innocent citizens from the lawless element.

The Guerrillas.—All wars have a tendency to bring the bad element of society to the surface; especially is this true of civil strifes. An awful bitterness and hatred existed between many Union and Confederate sympathizers, who, when not controlled by reason and justice, were guilty of many crimes. Bands of wild and wicked men who had some real or fancied grievance against other persons now began to rob, pillage and murder. Many of these outlaws were deserters from both armies, who cherished a hatred for the Union officers and soldiers whose duty it was to carry out military orders. Most of these guerrillas, as they were called, were unsoldierly rubbish of Southern sympathy who would dash into unprotected towns to loot, destroy, and murder defenseless Union men. Oftentimes they appeared in considerable bodies, robbed banks and stores, and destroyed public and private property. They were sometimes strong enough to overcome the home guards, and loot the entire town.² But the better element of the Union and Confederacy

¹ Smith, “History of Kentucky,” p. 638.

² Some of the Confederate officials encouraged the organization of guerrilla bands, but their crimes became so many and violent that many of the Confederate generals protested against it. Under date of March 18, 1865, General N. B. Forrest wrote to John C. Breckinridge, the Confederate Secretary of War, condemning these “roving bands of guerrillas, jay hawkers, and plunderers . . . who are dodging from pillar to post, preying upon the people, robbing them of their horses and other property, to the manifest injury of the country and our cause.”

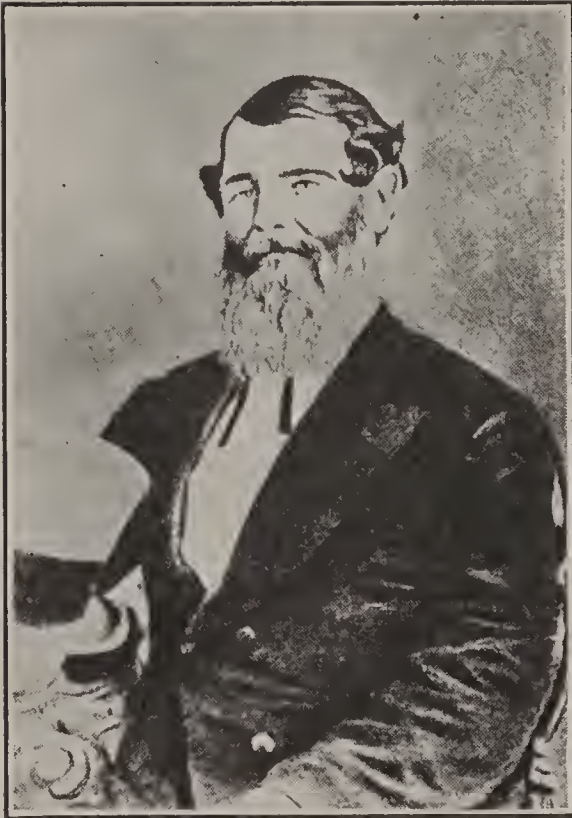
alike opposed the guerrillas and joined in hunting them down. Many were captured and immediately hanged on the spot where their crimes had been committed. The arrested guerrilla usually claimed to be a regular soldier of the Confederate army. Even the notorious Sue Mundy (Jerome Clarke), Henry Metcalfe, and Billy Magruder, who were guilty of many savage crimes, endeavored to save themselves by this plea. The crimes committed by the guerrillas aroused bitter retaliation against any persons suspected of sympathizing with them. Thus violence was met by violence while the innocent often became the sufferers.



JOHN HUNT MORGAN, C. S. A.

Morgan's Cavalry Raids.— During the war the State was many times invaded by the dashing cavalry raiders under General John H. Morgan. This was a regular branch of the Confederate cavalry sent into Kentucky for the purpose of breaking lines of communication between Federal armies, destroying or carrying off army supplies, burning railroad bridges and closing tunnels to hinder the movements of Union armies and supplies. They had many clashes with the home guards and small detachments of Union troops that were bloody affairs, but generally of short duration. Morgan and his well-mounted men moved like

a whirlwind from place to place, striking wherever opportunity offered, and never tarrying long enough to permit a large Union force to be brought against them. The methods of the great raider were new in



GOVERNOR BERIAH MAGOFFIN

warfare, and under his masterly leadership greatly handicapped the operations of the Union armies, and aided the Confederates. Morgan's band was well officered,¹ and excepting the acts of a few detached stragglers, was not guilty of deeds contrary to the usage of warfare. In July, 1862, Morgan dashed into Tompkinsville, Monroe County, and defeated two hundred and fifty Federal Cavalry, struck north on the railroad lines, destroying supply trains and

seizing horses for use in the Confederate army. At Cynthiana he captured about five hundred Federal soldiers under Colonel J. J. Landrum, after a hot fight. In the meantime he was being pursued by a superior Federal force under General Green Clay Smith and Colonel Frank Wolford. Morgan now turned south capturing towns and burning government stores as he

¹ Colonel Basil Duke and Captain Thomas H. Hines were two of the most distinguished officers in Morgan's command. Each gave a brilliant service after the war in the civil affairs of the State.

went. In this raid, in twenty-four days, he had traveled a thousand miles, fought many battles, destroyed military stores and spread general alarm through the State.

A Change of Governors.—In the midst of the excitement at this time a change in the civil head of the State occurred. Governor Magoffin, who was in open sympathy with the South, and, therefore, out of harmony with the Union Legislature, informed that body that if his “successor would be a conservative, just man, of high position and character,” he would resign.¹ The conditions he required were met, and James F. Robinson became acting Governor. Magoffin’s position had been a very trying one. The measures that were passed over his vetoes, and against his sympathies, he ordered to be faithfully carried out. He was open and honorable in his public acts, and patriotic in requiring that his successor be a worthy one.

Lincoln’s Plan to Free the Slaves.—On March 6, 1862, President Lincoln recommended to Congress the passing of an act for the gradual freeing of the slaves, promising to any State that would accept the plan, to pay for the losses caused “by such a change of system.” Both houses of Congress passed the resolutions, but, whether from pride or principle, none of the slave States would free their slaves and accept pay for them. In Kentucky alone the value of the slaves amounted to about one hundred million dollars; but the offer was not accepted. This act of the President and Congress was but another step toward the final, unconditional freedom of the negro. The policy of non-

¹ For full account see Collins, I, p. 108.

interference with slavery was gradually passing. The leaders of the North now believed the time had come to destroy slavery forever on American soil—this policy was soon to be adopted.

The Second Invasion of Kentucky.—At the close of the summer of 1862, General Braxton Bragg's army of forty-five thousand Confederates was stationed at Chattanooga, and General Kirby Smith with fifteen thousand was at Knoxville. General Buell with a



DON CARLOS BUELL, U. S. A.

strong Union army lay near Nashville. The second invasion of Kentucky now began. General John H. Morgan dashed north and cut Buell's line of communication to Louisville by burning railroad bridges and closing the tunnel near Gallatin, Tennessee. Generals Kirby Smith and Bragg broke camp and moved rapidly into central Kentucky. The State was poorly defended, and Louisville was a vast store-

house of Union supplies—a prize much coveted by the Confederates. Seeing the peril of Kentucky and his own danger of being cut off from his army stores and possibly surrounded by the enemy, Buell set his army in motion to reach Louisville, if possible, before Bragg. In the beginning the race was favorable to the Confederates, and if General Bragg had pressed his op-

portunity he doubtless would have captured Louisville, and probably destroyed Buell's army. But owing to the hesitation and delays of General Bragg and the speed of General Buell, the Union army entered Louisville September 25, where it was heavily re-enforced. In the meantime General Kirby Smith had entered Kentucky and defeated a Federal army of eight thousand men under Generals Nelson and Manson near Richmond, then moved on to Lexington where he was joined by General Morgan's cavalry. General Heth was sent in pursuit of the fleeing Federals and drove them back on the Ohio near Covington and Cincinnati. Instead of giving battle to Buell, General Bragg now turned toward Lexington. About the first of October, with an army re-enforced to one hundred thousand men, General Buell went in pursuit of the Confederates. October 3th, parts of the two armies came together in a bloody battle at Perryville that lasted from noon until dark. The next morning the Confederate army retreated. Shortly afterward the entire forces of the two armies were united near Harrodsburg and a great battle was expected. But General Bragg declined an engagement, and retreated south, carrying with him a "forty-mile wagon train" of supplies for his army. Kentucky was again



BRAXTON BRAGG, C. S. A.

clear of the Confederates, and remained under Union control to the end of the war. During this invasion there were many important skirmish battles. Sharp fights took place at Falmouth, Owensboro, Shepherdsville, New Castle, Augusta and other places. Most of these were between the home guards of these places and detached portions of the Confederate army.

Morgan's Last Raids.—In December, 1862, General John Morgan with three thousand cavalymen made another picturesque raid into Kentucky, captured Glasgow and Elizabethtown, destroyed the trestle-works at Muldraugh's Hill and tore up the railroad track. Near Rolling Fork he was attacked by the Federals under General John M. Harlan and suffered severe losses, but escaped into Tennessee. In June, 1863, he again returned to Kentucky with twenty-five hundred daring cavalymen, passed through Burksville, Columbia, Lebanon, and on to the Ohio at Brandenburg, where he crossed the river into Indiana. The whole country north and south of the Ohio now swarmed with enemies in pursuit of him. Notwithstanding his daring, swift movements and great courage, his band was overtaken, scattered, and Morgan and most of his men were captured. On the 28th of November he and six of his companions escaped from prison at Columbus, Ohio. In June, 1864, this wild-riding genius of raider warfare returned to Kentucky on his last campaign. On this occasion he captured four hundred prisoners and war stores at Mount Sterling. Then he divided his forces and sent them raiding in many directions. After many hard fought skirmishes, being himself repeatedly attacked, he gath-

ered up his weakened and scattered band and escaped into Virginia. Shortly afterwards he was killed in a surprise attack at Greenville, Tennessee—so passed the brave partisan and picturesque Confederate raider.

In the August election of 1863, Thomas Bramlette and Richard T. Jacob, Union Democratic candidates, were chosen Governor and Lieutenant Governor, respectively. Both these men were Federal officers and the State was overwhelmingly for the Union, yet the radical war element aroused great resentment by military interference in the election. The polls were guarded by soldiers and none were allowed to vote who were not in sympathy with the Union cause. During these years, every state election was connected by political interest with the national issues.

Slavery Doomed.—President Lincoln had promised not to disturb the rights of the slaveholder as long as the Constitution and laws of the United States were observed. In this promise he was doubtless sincere, but he now saw that to bring the war to a successful close and to save the Union, slavery must be abolished. To have kept his promise would have only deferred the agony. Destiny had decreed that slavery must go. Even most of the monarchies had liberated their slaves, and yet our great free republic of the United States still held men in bondage. Victor Hugo, the great Frenchman, declared, “Liberty is wearing a chain! The United States must renounce slavery, or they must renounce Liberty.”

Emancipation Proclamation.—On September 22, 1862, Lincoln issued his celebrated emancipation proclama-

tion, which announced that all slaves in States which are in rebellion January 1, 1863, will be declared free. It was a bid for the South to cease war and return to the Union; it was likewise a warning that within one hundred days, if she did not, her slaves would be set free. The South only jeered; and, on January 1, 1863, the final proclamation was issued. "As a fit and necessary war measure for suppressing the rebellion," said the President, "I order and declare that all persons held as slaves within the States now in rebellion are, and henceforth shall be free." Kentucky and other slaveholding States which had remained in the Union were excepted, but the people knew that it meant the final doom of slavery in all the States. Many had remained loyal to the Union in the belief that the rights of slavery would be maintained in the State. To them it was a severe blow, and created much anti-union talk. But the hand of destiny was shaping the movements of the time more than all the statesmen of the North and South.

In January, 1864, General Boyle resigned as military commandant of Kentucky, and General Steven G. Burbridge was appointed his successor. The new commandant was ordered by General Grant to stop "that habit of raiding parties . . . visiting towns, villages, and farms where there are no Federal forces, pillaging Union families." As an officer, acting under the orders of his superior, General Burbridge was compelled to take severe measures to suppress the guerillas, but in his foolish zeal he arrested persons suspected of disloyalty to the Union and sent them out of the State, tried to control the elections by military

force, interfered with the rights of candidates to run for office, and in other ways deprived the people of their civil rights. A strong military hand was needed, but not the hand of a tyrant. The brutal violence of Burbridge was condemned by fair-minded Union men, and it developed much bitterness in the hearts of all freemen of the State.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Why did the people resent martial law? Who were the Guerrillas? Describe Morgan's first cavalry raid. Why did Governor Magoffin resign? Who succeeded him? What plan did President Lincoln propose to free the slaves? Give an account of the second invasion of Kentucky. Describe Morgan's last raids. Why was slavery doomed? When and in what manner did Lincoln issue his emancipation proclamation? Who succeeded General Boyle as military commandant in Kentucky?

CHAPTER XLII

CLOSE OF THE WAR

PEACE AND RECONSTRUCTION

Recruiting Negro Soldiers.—By the beginning of the year of 1864, the tide of Confederate success had been turned at Gettysburg, and the Confederate lines were being pushed southward. The Government was rallying every possible force to overwhelm the South and end the war. Kentucky had promptly complied with

all demands for men and money to carry on the war, but when the Government began recruiting negro soldiers within the State it aroused many angry protests. The Kentuckians were brave but proud soldiers and were used to thinking of negroes as servants, unworthy as companions in arms. Fiery speeches were made against the order in the State and by Kentucky members in Congress. Colonel Frank Wolford, the gallant Union cavalry leader, aroused the people against "keeping step to the music of the Union alongside of negro soldiers," and for his defiance was clapped into prison. Lieutenant Governor Jacob also suffered arrest for denouncing the acts of the Government. These and similar protests were the natural outgrowth of the relation of master and slave. While still resenting Federal interference with their civil rights, the people, after a time, grudgingly submitted.

Elections in 1864.—We must turn now to an interesting political situation in the State during the year of 1864. In his extreme zeal for the Union, General Burbridge attempted military interference in the election of a judge to the court of appeals. The Conservative Union men, however, rallied around Judge George Robertson and defeated Mortimer M. Benton, who was the nominee of the Radical wing, and General Burbridge's candidate. Judge Robertson was a distinguished lawyer and patriot, but opposed to the severe military conduct of the Radical leaders. In November of this year came also the presidential election. The candidates were Abraham Lincoln and General George B. McClellan. Lincoln favored maintaining the Union without slavery; McClellan favored

continuing it, but with slavery. The leading spirit of the Radical party was the able divine, Robert J. Breckinridge,¹ and of the Union Democrat party was Judge James Guthrie. The Union Democrats won in the State, giving to McClellan a majority of over thirty-six thousand votes, but President Lincoln was elected in the country at large. The results of these elections show that Kentucky still stood for the Union but against interference with slavery; for civil home rule, against military misrule. Right or wrong, the State consistently held to her traditions concerning the rights of her people.

The Fall of the Confederacy.—By the beginning of 1864, only Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia remained under the control of the Confederate army. It was now certain that the gallant but weakened armies of the South must soon yield. Numerous bloody battles were fought by the Confederates against overwhelming odds. Sherman marched a large army southeast through Georgia to the sea, and Grant captured Richmond, the Confederate capital. General Lee's broken, ragged and starving army, now reduced to only twenty-six thousand men, many of whom were without arms, surrendered at Appomattox Court House, Virginia, April 9, 1865. The great struggle ended when Johnston surrendered to Sherman seventeen days later.

Close of the War.—The war was over! A shout of joy rang through the land; and yet, crêpe was on the

¹ The Reverend Breckinridge exerted an influence second only to that of John J. Crittenden in preventing Kentucky from seceding from the Union.

doors of thousands of homes, and there was mourning about as many hearthstones for unreturning husbands, sons and brothers. Be it said to the lasting glory of the victors that no government ever showed so great mercy to those who had tried to wreck it. Only one



GEN. U. S. GRANT, U. S. A.

GEN. ROBERT E. LEE, C. S. A.

Lee and Grant were both graduates of West Point; both gave an able military service to the cause he believed just. Following the war Grant became President of the United States for two terms. Lee nobly gave his remaining years to the education of the youth of the land he loved.

Confederate, the keeper of the Andersonville Prison, was put to death—not because he was a Confederate captive, but because of his many inhuman crimes against helpless prisoners. When Lee surrendered, Grant said to him, “Let all men who claim to own a horse or mule take the animals home with them to work their little farms.” Out of the bountiful supplies

of the Union army Grant ordered that the hungry Confederate soldiers be fed. Notwithstanding the bloody struggle of four years, the time for peace had now come. The brave had met the brave, and each had fought in the belief that his cause was just. To the victor belonged, not the spoils, not the power to punish and oppress, but to set to work to close the breach between the North and the South and to heal a nation's wounds. The long debated right of secession had been settled by an appeal to arms. Henceforward, the Union must be maintained and the destiny of a great united country worked out. The principles of our Government, the rights of an enslaved race, and the verdict of civilization were all against the "Lost Cause."

The war cost about seven hundred thousand lives, nearly equally divided between the North and South. The cost in money to the Union alone more than doubled the value of all the slaves, while the loss to the South in money and property was probably still greater.

Assassination of Lincoln.—Five days after the surrender of Lee's army, while bonfires were still being lighted throughout the North in celebration of the victory, the country was suddenly plunged into gloom by the assassination of President Lincoln. The deed of blood and madness was done by John Wilkes Booth, a hate-crazed sympathizer of the Confederacy. Though the South was guiltless of the deed, it deepened the hatred of the North against her. Lincoln was a great and just man, and already he was planning for the peaceable settlement of the troubles, even in

opposition to the bitter partisans of the North. The dead President's victorious dream-ship of the Union had indeed come into port amidst the rejoicing of the people, but the Captain lay dead upon the deck.¹

The Emancipation Proclamation did not free the slaves in Kentucky and other States which had not seceded, but the Thirteenth Amendment, passed in 1865, did. The Fourteenth Amendment (1868) made the negro a citizen, and the Fifteenth Amendment, passed in 1870, made him a voter. Kentucky opposed all these amendments.

Martial Law and Politics.—Our State furnished about seventy-five thousand soldiers to the Union service and about one-third as many to the Confederacy. Whether they fought for the blue or the gray, they won praise for courage and valor. When the war was over, those who survived returned to their homes and set about the arts of peace. In December, 1865, the Legislature repealed all laws enacted against treason and restored civil rights to all Confederate citizens. With few exceptions, the Kentuckians now forgot their differences and gave the hand of welcome to the returning heroes of both armies. Had martial law been suspended, and the people been permitted to conduct their own affairs through civil officers and courts, much of the ill feeling that followed the war would have been avoided. Kentucky had been loyal to the Union and there was not now, if there had ever been, any excuse for mar-

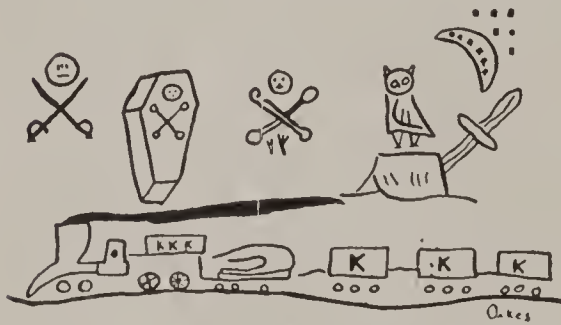
¹ Before his death President Lincoln dreamed a ship came into port bringing news of victory. He also dreamed that he had died. His poet-friend, Walt Whitman, tells about the circumstance, in his poem, "O Captain! My Captain." Probably the poet was thinking of the Union as the Ship of State.

tial law. But partisan war officers remained in the saddle and by their authority, much of it self-imposed, many things were done to disturb the people in their civil rights. This strain put upon them caused many of the Radical element, now known as the Republican party, to turn to the Democratic party. So it came about that a part of the Conservative Union people, Confederate soldiers, and many who had suffered from the evils of military rule, turned to the Democratic party. In 1867 the Democratic ticket led by John L. Helm for Governor and John W. Stevenson for Lieutenant Governor was elected by a large majority. All the other officers of the Democratic ticket were likewise elected. The overwhelming victory was a rebuke to the Radical element and to military interference with civil rule. These things led to a united Democratic party which has remained in almost continuous power in the State to this day. Some of the Conservative Union leaders who went with the Republicans were C. F. Burnham, John M. Harlan, James Speed and William H. Wadsworth, who were patriots and men of high honor and service in their State.

The Freedmen's Bureau.—Five days after his election, Governor Helm died and Lieutenant Governor Stevenson became acting Governor, and was re-elected the following August. The people of Kentucky now wanted peace and the right to resume their duties as peaceable citizens under civil laws, but much ill temper was provoked by the actions of the agents of the Freedmen's Bureau whose object was to protect the rights of the negro as a freeman. Its activities were probably necessary in the seceded States, but in Ken-

tucky, which had not seceded, the acts of the Bureau were duly declared unconstitutional. However, these things maddened the people and turned many loyal Union men to the Democratic party and retarded a better feeling toward the negro.

Ku Klux Klan.—Another evil plant that grew out of the war-torn soil of the South was the Ku Klux Klan. It consisted of bands of hooded men who took the law, as all mobs do, into their own hands and attempted



Some of the symbols scrawled on the "Warnings" sent to persons marked for punishment by the "Grand Cyclops" of the Ku Klux Klan.

to frighten or punish unruly negroes and criminals. For a time it executed a sort of rude justice, but being itself lawless, it soon fell into evil ways and became a terror to the innocent as well as the guilty.

The spooky, hooded garb worn by the night-prowling bands struck terror to the superstitious blacks. Its uncanny warnings against all who opposed it made it impossible to get witnesses to testify against its members; so, for a time, it defied the civil laws of the State. It is true, that many criminal wretches were held in check by fear of a visit from the Ku Klux, but the unlawful and brutal acts often committed by it finally brought its own undoing. The people grew weary of it, and maddened by its misdeeds, speedily crushed it. In short, the sentiment of the people righted itself, and by 1873, the Ku Klux Klan was added to the past horrors of the war period. Many such organizations which sprung from the war period were short lived.

Behavior of the Slaves.—The strength of the South in maintaining her heroic fight against overwhelming odds lay largely in the splendid behavior of the slaves during the absence of nearly all their white masters. These faithful servants went about their masters' business, peaceably plowing, sowing and reaping for the helpless families of those who were away fighting to keep them in bondage. At no time was there any danger of an uprising of the negroes, but on the contrary they faithfully cared for and protected the women and children who might easily have become their helpless victims. The beauty and strength of their devotion scarcely has its equal in history. The freeing of the slaves changed labor conditions which required time to adjust. In his new rôle as a freeman the negro was restless and uncertain of his course, and time was required for him to find his proper relations to changed conditions. He owned but little property and was still a servant, but a hireling. Many of the older ones were employed by their former masters and gave a faithful service, but the younger class felt the thrill of their novel condition and roved about the country and lounged about the towns to "enjoy their freedom." The necessity for the negro to labor, and of his former master to employ him soon brought about a better understanding between them. The negro had become a citizen and voter and his education became important. He paid but little taxes, so the burden of his education fell upon the white man; for this reason many opposed negro schools. In time, however, all came to see the necessity of his education, and free schools were provided for negro children.

Out of the chaos following the war, time brought forth the present order, which, though imperfect, seems to be the best answer to a difficult problem.

In the election of 1871, the negro freemen of Kentucky cast their first votes. Governor Stevenson having been elected to the United States Senate, was



LINCOLN CABIN ENCLOSED IN THE MEMORIAL BUILDING
AT HODGENVILLE

succeeded by Preston H. Leslie, Lieutenant Governor. In the August election he was opposed by John M. Harlan, a distinguished Republican veteran. The Democratic nominees were Governor Leslie for re-election and John G. Carlisle for Lieutenant Governor. Although the Republican vote was increased by negro suffrage, the Democrats were elected by a large majority. The State now settled down to the longed-for years of peace and progress.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Describe the final movements and the fall of the Confederate armies.
Question for class debate: Resolved that Robert E. Lee was a greater military chieftain than U. S. Grant. What terms of surrender were made to the Confederate armies? Give an account of the assassination of Lincoln.



UNFINISHED MONUMENT TO JEFFERSON DAVIS AT FAIRVIEW

“The Union of Lakes—the Union of lands
The Union of States none can sever.
The Union of hearts, the Union of hands
And the flag of our Union forever.”



CHAPTER XLIII

POLITICAL AFFAIRS

AFTER the Civil War a state of social and financial unrest existed throughout the country. In 1873, following a period of prosperity and wild speculation, came a financial crash. Fortunately, Kentucky was in a prosperous condition, and while there were many financial losses, the State suffered less than most of the other States of the Union.

Geological Surveys.—Beneath the soil of Kentucky lay inexhaustible supplies of coal, oil, and other minerals, the extent of which was little known at this time. A survey was begun in 1854, by Dr. David D. Owen, and continued for five years. Much valuable information concerning the great mineral wealth of the State was obtained by this survey, but its work so well begun was interrupted by the tumult of the Civil War. In 1873 the General Assembly ordered the Governor to appoint a geologist and assistants to examine the geological formations of the State, and to report on the “deposits of ore, coal, clays and such other mineral substances as may be useful and valuable.” Governor Leslie appointed Nathan S. Shaler, a Kentuckian, who was then a teacher of geology in Harvard University, as chief geologist. Large sums of money were appropriated by the Legislature to carry on the work. Through the industry and scholar-



A GROUP OF GOVERNORS

William Goebel.
A. O. Stanley.

J. C. W. Beckham.

Augustus Willson.
William O. Bradley.

ship of Professor Shaler the hidden wealth of the State was discovered and mapped, and the greater industrial development of the State was stimulated by his reports.

Elections.—In 1875 the Democrats elected James B. McCreary for Governor and the Legislature chose James B. Beck and General John S. Williams United States Senators. In the next election the Democrats won again. Dr. Luke P. Blackburn was elected Governor in 1879, and gave to the State a wise administration. Through his efforts the crowded conditions of the State Prisons were relieved, and the sufferings of the convicts lessened. The Governor pardoned many of the most deserving prisoners in order to relieve the crowded condition of the prisons. Following his action a special commission pardoned a hundred more, and with the aid of the Governor adopted many penal reforms.

In 1883, J. Proctor Knott was elected Governor and James B. Beck was returned to the United States Senate. At the same time J. C. S. Blackburn was elected to succeed Senator Williams. Under the wise administration of Governor Knott a State Board of Equalization was appointed which raised and equalized the tax assessments and relieved the State of a great financial deficit. In the State election of 1887, the Democratic party continued in power by electing General Simon B. Buckner, Governor.

Adopting the New Constitution.—The State Constitution which had been adopted in 1850 protected slavery and contained provisions that now conflicted with the Federal Constitution. The people knew these things,

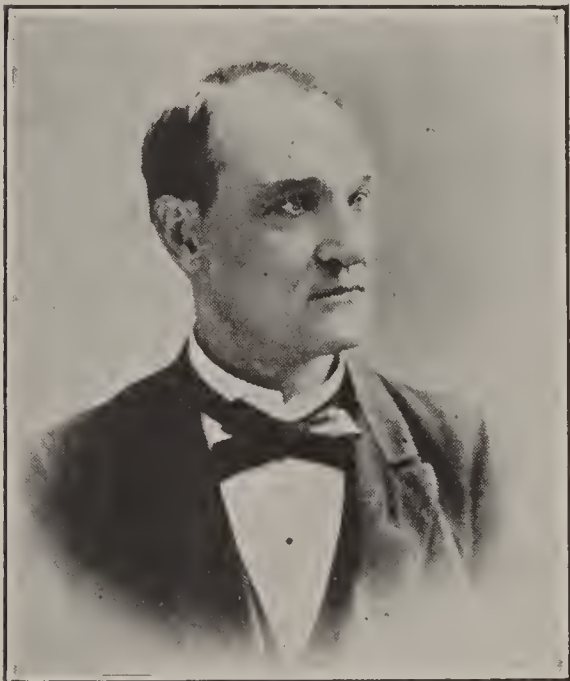
but many stubbornly resisted any changes, hence the old constitution remained out of date for many years. The method of revising the constitution had been made very difficult, and many meetings were held throughout the State and resolutions of the General Assembly were passed before final action was taken to secure a constitutional convention to frame a new instrument. After much agitation a new Constitution was adopted in 1891. The old Constitution was greatly changed and the new one was made almost twice as long. "Its chief fault lay in the fact that its members tried to legislate for all time."¹ It prohibited special laws for the benefit of any person or business, made lotteries illegal, provided for a "secret official ballot," limited the sessions of the Legislature to sixty days, provided for an easier method of changing the Constitution, and prohibited the making of more than two amendments at one time. It further provided that State officers shall not hold the same office for two continuous terms. However faithful and excellent an official may be, he cannot be re-elected to succeed himself. Many objected to this and other provisions of the new Constitution and amendments have been made.

In 1891, the Democrats elected John Young Brown Governor. The old question of the permanent location of the State capitol came up the first year of Governor Brown's administration. Many objections to the location of the capitol at Frankfort had been made from time to time. A joint committee of both houses of the Legislature was appointed to choose the site for a new State House. The committee selected Frank-

¹ Kerr, "History of Kentucky," Vol. II, p. 1005.

fort as the permanent site. During the years of 1905-1909 one of the most handsome capitol buildings in America was erected on a beautiful site on the left bank of the Kentucky River at Frankfort.

The Free Silver Campaign.—A widespread money panic again swept the country, and methods of meeting



JOHN G. CARLISLE

it entered into heated state and national campaigns in 1896. Opinions of able statesmen in the same parties were divided, and many voters refused to support the ticket of their own party. The chief issue was the free coinage of silver and gold at a ratio of 16 to 1.¹ The people were in financial distress and there was great political excitement. John G. Carlisle of Kentucky, who was

President Cleveland's Secretary of the Treasury, made speeches in the State against bimetallism and advocated a gold standard. The political parties in Kentucky were greatly divided on the issue. The

¹ That is, 1 ounce of gold in value should equal, when coined, 16 ounces of silver. At this time the ratio was about 1 to 28 and the silver dollar was worth only 56¢ in gold. The free silver men said if silver and gold should be coined free at a ratio of 16 to 1, it would fix the value of both metals and make money more plentiful. This, however, would have made a "double standard" of value to which the "sound money" men objected. The sound money advocates believed that such a policy was an effort to create value by law instead of permitting the commercial demands for the two metals to control the value of each.

question caused a split in the Democratic ranks. P. W. Hardin was the free silver candidate of the Democratic party, and William O. Bradley the sound money candidate of the Republican party for Governor. The entire Republican ticket was elected and the State passed for the first time under the rule of this party. In the Presidential election the regular Democratic organization supported William Jennings Bryan, the free silver candidate for the Presidency, against William McKinley, the Republican sound money candidate. The sound money Democrats, under the name of National Democrats, nominated John M. Palmer and Simon B. Buckner on a separate ticket. The campaign was a hard fought and bitter one. Labor and capital, the poor man and the rich man, were pitted against each other in an exciting contest. The returns of the election showed a victory for McKinley in the State and in the Nation. So it again happened that the conservative voter of Kentucky refused to be led by passion and prejudice to follow his party against his judgment. The same year an exciting contest arose in the Legislature over the election of a United States Senator. After a long deadlock between J. C. S. Blackburn, Democrat, and W. Godfrey Hunter, Republican, W. J. Deboe, a Republican, was elected. However, in 1900 Blackburn was elected Senator to succeed William J. Lindsay. Six years later Blackburn was succeeded by Thomas H. Paynter. Ex-Governor McCreary, a Democrat, succeeded W. J. Deboe in the Senate in 1902.

Tollgate Raiders.—During Governor Bradley's administration beginning in 1896, a certain element of

people who always fret at restraint, broke out against the tollgates on public roads. Many of the turnpikes of the State had been built by chartered companies who were allowed to collect toll to pay for them and keep them up. This lawless element issued warnings to the tollgate keepers to collect no more tolls. When these warnings were not heeded the gates and toll-keepers' houses were raided and destroyed. Notwithstanding the efforts of the Governor and other officers of the State the lawlessness went on. To settle these troubles the State, which owned a part of the turnpike stock, finally purchased the shares of the stockholders at greatly reduced values and made the roads free.

The "Goebel Election Law."—In 1898, State Senator William Goebel secured the passage of an election law which provided that the Legislature should appoint three election commissioners for the State, and that these commissioners in turn should appoint election boards for each county. This act, which was passed over Governor Bradley's veto, became known as the "Goebel Election Law." It aroused the bitter opposition of the Republicans as well as that of many Democrats. It was manifestly wrong, for it gave undue power to the party in office.

In 1899, in spite of opposition, Goebel was nominated for Governor and J. C. W. Beckham for Lieutenant Governor. Again the Democratic party split and the "Honest-election Democratic Party" nominated John Young Brown for Governor. The Republicans nominated William S. Taylor. Another bitter political fight followed. Charges of fraud, intimidation and illegality were made on both sides. When the votes

were counted Taylor was declared elected, but the Democrats had carried both branches of the Legislature by large majorities. The election of the Republican candidates was contested before the Democratic Legislature. It was generally believed that in the contest Goebel would be declared elected.

The Assassination of Goebel.—On January 25, 1900, over five hundred mountain men met in Frankfort for the announced purpose of petitioning for a just settlement. These men were armed, and some considered their conduct as an act of war. The situation became tense and dangerous. January 30, Goebel was shot on the capitol grounds by some one concealed in the office of the Secretary of State, and died three days later. In the meantime, the Legislature had declared Goebel and Beckham elected Governor and Lieutenant Governor. Before dying, Goebel was sworn into office, and on the day of his death he was succeeded by Lieutenant Governor Beckham. The capital was now bristling with armed men and state militia, and a single shot or blow might have led to a bloody conflict. Fortunately the situation was so grave that it sobered men and made both sides cautious, and thus a greater disgrace to the fair name of Kentucky was avoided.

The State now had two sets of officials, each endeavoring to carry on the government, but each acting a comedy that all the while threatened to become a tragedy. The contest was carried to the State Court of Appeals and decided in favor of the Democrats; then to the United States Supreme Court, which rightly refused to interfere with the State government. The Republicans now submitted. Some were arrested

and imprisoned for the assassination of Goebel. Taylor fled to Indiana to prevent arrest, and the Governor of that State refused to give him up to the Kentucky officials. The bitterness of the time caused many quarrels, severed many life-long friendships and deepened partisan hatred. The affair brought upon the name of Kentucky a widespread and just condemnation. It would be unfair to censure one party more than the other, but it is just to charge it all to designing, unscrupulous, and unpatriotic politicians of both parties. A just opinion of the affair is summed up by William Lindsay as follows: "In the estimation of the great mass of the people, neither side can defend or excuse its methods or escape its share of responsibility for the deplorable conditions brought about by the embittered and protracted controversy." William Goebel was a brave and able man but a bitter partisan. The manner of his death is a dark blot on the page of Kentucky history. He had done much to stay the power of some mighty corporations and to defend the rights of the people. May the wrongs and the party hatred of that unhappy time never be repeated.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Give an account of the surveys made of the resources of Kentucky. What reforms were carried out by Governor Blackburn? Give an account of the adoption of the new Constitution in 1891. What changes were made in it? What stand did Kentucky take in the free silver campaign of 1896? Who were the "Toll Gate Raiders"? What was the "Goebel Election Law"? Tell about the assassination of William Goebel.

CHAPTER XLIV

CIVIL AFFAIRS

LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR BECKHAM, who had succeeded to the unexpired term of William Goebel, was elected Governor in 1900, and again in 1903. One of the acts of his first administration was to call a special session of the Legislature to repeal the Goebel Election Law which had been such a great disturber of the peace. In its place a fair and non-partisan election law was passed.

The Night Riders.—In 1904 the price of tobacco dropped below the cost to produce it. The growers organized the Planters' Protective Association to pool their tobacco and compel the "tobacco trust" to pay better prices. Many planters refused to join the Association; "night riders," who favored the Association, attempted to force them to join, or not to raise tobacco. Again lawlessness got into the saddle, and armed night-riding bands visited the farms of the growers who refused to join the Association, destroyed their young plants and other property, and sometimes whipped the owners. The trusts took sides with the independent growers but this only increased the rage of the members of the Association. The night riders now sought vengeance against the trusts by destroying their property. Factories and warehouses were burned or dynamited at Trenton, Princeton and Elk-

ton. A year later a mob took possession of Hopkinsville and burned three factories. Thus again a kind of Ku-Klux disorder reigned in a part of Kentucky. It was a mad and unlawful protest against wrong, but it succeeded in doing much to correct the crimes of the tobacco trust against the growers. By 1907, most of the tobacco was pooled by the Association, and the price went up to fifteen cents a pound. It is easy to see that the outbreaks of the tobacco growers were violent protests caused by the wrongs committed against them. Wrong though it was, many violated the law when they believed their rights and liberties were threatened. But mobs, night riders and Ku Klux Klans have no place in a civil government where people, in a lawful way, may obtain their rights by banding together as citizens instead of as criminals.

State and National Elections.—In all the Presidential elections from 1900 to 1912, Kentucky voted for the Democratic candidates, but in 1907, led by Augustus E. Willson for Governor, and W. H. Cox for Lieutenant Governor, the Republicans elected their State ticket. Tobacco troubles and night-riding crimes continued in the early part of Governor Willson's administration. The Governor called upon the Legislature to pass laws to put down these crimes; he also placed Calloway County under martial law. He called upon the law-abiding citizens to "take strong, prompt and effective measures to punish every cowardly scoundrel who rides the road to threaten his neighbors." After a time, many of the offenders were arrested and some were found guilty and punished. By 1909, these

troubles were settled and the tobacco growers became prosperous and happy.

In 1911, James B. McCreary and Edward J. McDermott, Democratic nominees, defeated Judge E. C. O'Rear and L. L. Bristow, the Republican candidates, for Governor and Lieutenant Governor respectively. The Legislature elected Ollie M. James, Democrat Representative in Congress, to succeed Thomas H. Paynter in the United States Senate.

Temperance Campaign.—For many years a campaign against intemperance, and the manufacture and sale of intoxicating liquors had been going on. The people were alarmed at the increase of drunkenness and crime, and the meddling of the saloon and whiskey interests in politics. The distillation of whiskey in the State rose from 403,000 gallons in 1868 to 30,386,000 gallons in 1882, and was rapidly increasing when the prohibition movement began. The whiskey people were alarmed at the growing sentiment against their business and fought long to save it, but lost.



GOVERNOR JAMES B. MCCREARY

Laws were passed in 1912 permitting counties to vote as a unit to prohibit the sale of intoxicating liquors within their borders. A law was also passed prohibit-

ing the shipment of liquors into "dry" counties except upon the prescription of a physician. As the sentiment against the blighting traffic increased, other laws were passed against it, until it had no legal protection in the State. The downfall of the liquor business was largely due to a State law brought about by the efforts of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union requiring the teaching of temperance in the public schools of the State. Another act passed by the Legislature at this time gave to women who could read and write, and who possessed the qualifications required of male voters, the right to vote in school elections, and hold office. The right of suffrage for women, like the temperance question, had been growing in favor for many years and this act of the Legislature was only the beginning of the full rights of suffrage that women enjoy today.

Primary Election Law.—Another act passed by the Legislature in 1912 shows the wish of the people to enjoy complete political rights. Until this time delegates to conventions chose the nominees of their parties. A Primary Election Law was passed requiring both political parties to select their nominees for office at the same time, and at the expense of the State. An act passed in 1920, now permits party candidates to be chosen by conventions. In May, 1914, Senator William O. Bradley having died, Governor McCreary appointed Johnson N. Camden, Democrat, to fill the temporary vacancy. An amendment to the United States Constitution, made in 1913, now required Senators to be elected by the people. In the November election, 1914, ex-Governor Beck-

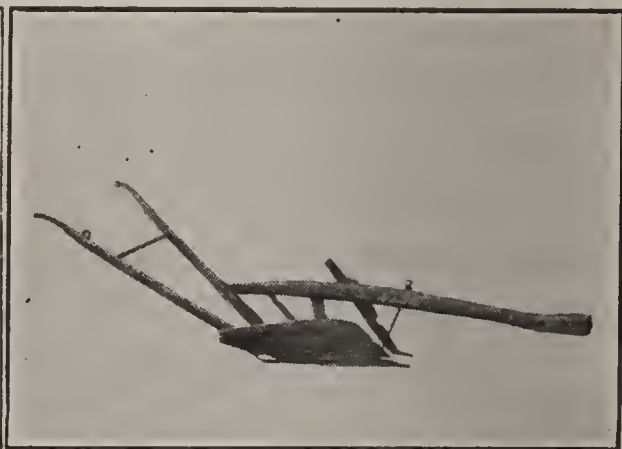
ham, the Democratic candidate for the United States Senate, who was an ardent advocate of prohibition, defeated the Republican candidate, ex-Governor Willson. In this election only two Republicans won in the congressional elections—John W. Langley and Caleb Powers. Powers had been imprisoned for the assassination of Goebel, but his friends of the Eleventh District, who believed in his innocence, rallied about him and sent him to Congress. In the November election of 1915, A. O. Stanley and James D. Black, Democratic candidates for Governor and Lieutenant Governor, respectively, defeated Edwin P. Morrow and Lewis L. Walker, the Republican nominees.

Development of Agriculture.—The pages of Kentucky history are filled with the doings of statesmen, soldiers and politicians, but the citizen who toils faithfully at his post is the foundation of the State's power and prosperity. The greatest wealth of Kentucky is in its soil, and the most important citizen is the good man who intelligently tills it. The pioneer farmer was greedy for land but thought nothing of preserving its beauty and fertility. "Wild land" was abundant, and when his "clearing" lost its fertility and produced poor crops he "sold out and moved West." This land destroying habit went on for a century before the people realized the crime that was being committed against those who were to come after them. Thousands of "old fields," gully-washed and briar-grown, may be seen in every part of the State. The early Kentuckian looked upon our continent as boundless and inexhaustible and wasted its riches with a prodigal

hand. He did not realize that he held his land in trust for those who were to follow him. When the tide of emigration reached the Pacific shores and began to roll back upon the run-over lands of our continent, the people realized the ruin that had been wrought, and turned their attention to saving and improving the fertility of the soil. This new condition was the beginning of a new agricultural era. The modern farmer now sees the mistakes of his ancestor, and is



TRACTOR-DRAWN GANG PLOW



AN OLD WOODEN PLOW

striving to restore the beauty and fertility of the soil that have been lost. This situation has called science to its aid, and successful farming today is the big job of intelligent men. It is true that some of the earlier farmers had visions of the coming need and strove to save the beauty and fertility of the land. As early as 1865 the State Agricultural and Mechanical College was established to carry on, in part, the work of soil and crop improvement. Many appropriations were made from time to time by the Legislature for the benefit of the State Agricultural Society. More

recently an Agricultural Experiment Station was established at Lexington and, with its extension departments, is doing much toward improving soil fertility and crop production. It is reaching out into every part of the State and teaching the farmers more scientific methods of agriculture. Under modern conditions farmers realize that it pays to use intelligence in farming. No longer is farming regarded as an ignorant man's job. The names of R. A. Alexander, Abe Renick, Benjamin Vanmeter, M. O. Hughes, and the Warfields are prominent in the State for the intelligent work they have done in agriculture and stock raising. Rev. E. McCollum, the pioneer orchardist of Henderson, has rendered an important service to the State in developing the scientific and profitable growing of fruit. More of the present prosperity of Kentucky is due to men who have stayed on the farm and worked patiently and intelligently to produce better crops and improve rural conditions than to any other class.

A campaign for the education of the farmer in the use of fertilizers, forage crops, cover crops, growing of legumes, drainage and all other means of soil improvement has been going on for some time. The farmer has learned that many birds, toads, and other insect destroying creatures are his friends and he is demanding their protection. In every part of the State, Farm Agents who are graduates of agricultural colleges, are teaching the farmers the science of successful farming. Improved implements for plowing, planting, cultivating and harvesting crops are lessening the toil and increasing the income of the farmer. A new day in agriculture has dawned; the crude,

plodding and wasteful methods of pioneer days are gone.

Farm Organizations.—The Farm Bureau, Farmers' Union, and similar societies are composed of farmers who are working for the improvement in farm conditions. The great State Fair that is now maintained, is a milestone in the agricultural progress of the Commonwealth. With more intelligent farming have come more intelligent methods of selling farm products. A number of co-operative marketing organizations, tobacco pools, and other agencies for realizing just values for crops are being conducted. The value of all farm crops in Kentucky in 1919 was \$347,338,888.00, or nearly three times as much as in 1909. This increase is due largely to improved methods of farming. Kentucky leads all other States in the production of tobacco, producing nearly one-third of all that is grown in the United States. It leads in the production of blue grass seed and ranks second in the production of sorghum. More thoroughbred race horses are raised in Kentucky than in all the other States of the Union put together. Much of the drudgery in the home and on the farm has been overcome by the use of modern inventions. Many farm homes now have all the comforts and conveniences of those of the cities. With the coming of rural free delivery, better schools, better roads and automobiles, and better living conditions, the scientific tiller of the soil enters upon a life more pleasant for himself and more useful to the State.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

For what purpose did Governor Beckham call a special session of the Legislature? Give an account of the "Night Riders." What efforts did Governor Willson make to put down night riding? Tell about the temperance movement. What was the Primary Election Law? Give an account of the development of agriculture in the State. What was the object of the farm organizations?

CHAPTER XLV

EDUCATIONAL PROGRESS AND RESOURCES
OF KENTUCKY

THE spirit of personal liberty has always been the ruling motive of the Kentuckian. His motto in fighting the Indians was "Every man to his man, and every man to his tree." This same self-reliant spirit caused him to push into the wilderness and erect his cabin far from the protection of the settlements. When the time came to educate his children he preferred to fight ignorance according to his own method. He did not realize the need of education for every citizen in a government by the people, nor the strength that lay in a group working together for the same purpose. After a time, however, he came to see that a community could do more working together than each working separately; so, district schools were organized. These received but little aid from the State and were poorly attended, but they were a step toward a still larger and better plan for carrying on the work of education.

In 1891 the new Constitution gave the General Assembly the power to "provide an efficient system of common schools throughout the State"; but the Legis-

lature did not levy a tax for their general support until thirteen years afterwards. A law passed by the Legislature in 1893 provided for the establishment of public schools and the levying of local taxes to support them. Some districts voted taxes but many did not; so, in 1908 the Legislature passed a law requiring all districts to establish schools and to vote local taxes for their support. Thus a change was made from a voluntary to a compulsory system of schools. The



A LOG SCHOOL HOUSE AND MODERN CONSOLIDATED COUNTY
SCHOOL BUILDING

State now had the power to compel every district in every county to support a public school, but each district elected its own trustees to manage it. By an Act of the Legislature in 1920 the county was made the school unit, not including the independent city districts, and the schools were put under a County Board elected by the voters. Many of the people still clung to their ideas of home rule for each district, consequently, they opposed the County Unit law.

Under the present laws, the State Board of Education requires a common school for each district, at least one high school for each county, fixes the salaries

and qualifications of the teachers, decides the kind of school houses that may be built, and has control of the state school fund. It prescribes the course of study and general rules and regulations for the government of all public schools. The State Board of Education is composed of the Superintendent of Public Instruction, the Attorney General and the Secretary of State. These officials are members of the Board of Education by the right of the offices to which they are elected. As recommended by the State Educational Survey Commission in 1921, there should be a non-partisan State Board of Education, appointed or elected, to conduct, under proper laws, a better system of schools for Kentucky.

The prosperity of a people and the safety of a Republic depend on an educated citizenship. Every child in the cities and rural districts alike should have an equal opportunity for education. This can be provided only by an efficient State system of schools. Compulsory school attendance laws are now in force and thousands of children of uneducated or indifferent parents are attending school who otherwise would grow up in ignorance and crime. An educational revival has been sweeping the State since 1908, and rapid progress has been made. This educational awakening decreased the illiteracy of the State nearly four percent from 1910 to 1920. But Kentucky was tardy in founding a good school system and still lags behind many other states.

From the beginning the people of Kentucky have been interested in education. To meet the requirements many small colleges were established, but they

did not completely answer the popular needs. These schools, however, often had some of the most scholarly teachers in America, under whose instruction was developed many of the leading men of our State. Georgetown College, Bethel at Russellville, Center at Danville, Central College at Richmond and the great Catholic schools at Bardstown did a noble work but they could not reach and educate the masses of the people. Berea College in Madison County has been giving to the mountain people excellent industrial and college training for many years. Besides these, there were many colleges for girls, and small private schools throughout the State. It was fortunate for Kentucky that these schools existed at a time when the State was without an efficient public school system. The University of Kentucky at Lexington is supported by the State and is the head of the public school system. Under the leadership of able men it has done much for higher education, but it has suffered for lack of funds to carry forward a complete university program. Recent laws, however, are giving relief to the University of Kentucky and its educational usefulness is rapidly increasing. Dr. James K. Patterson was President of Kentucky Agricultural and Mechanical College, now University of Kentucky, for forty-one years—the longest time in point of service ever given by a president to an American college. Such was the devotion of this great teacher, that at a time when the college was in need of funds for buildings, he pledged all his savings to secure the money.

Normal Schools.—To supply the increasing demand for better trained teachers the Legislature passed an

act in 1906 establishing two Normal Schools, one at Richmond and the other at Bowling Green. The great popularity of these schools is shown by the thousands of young teachers who are attending them. By an act of the Legislature in 1922 two more Normal Schools were ordered to be established.

Kentucky has shaken off the educational lethargy of a hundred years and a new era of enlightenment dawns. While the State has been tardy in educational development, it has never deserved the unjust criticisms and misrepresentations that have been heaped upon it by critics of other states. Under the splendid leadership of its able educators it will soon occupy second place to no other state. Superintendent George Colvin, the present head of the State's school system, says "that probably no state in the whole Union has made more marked improvement in educational matters than has Kentucky in the immediate past."

Cost of Education Compared.—It may be interesting to compare a few items of cost in their relation to education. The total expenditure for public education in Kentucky in 1919 was \$8,117,074.00. To the reader this may seem an enormous sum, yet more than this amount was spent in the State for jewelry; twice as much for face powder, cosmetics and perfumes; and over three times as much for cigars and cigarettes.¹ But the relative cost of war and the cost of education is a still more instructive lesson to the thoughtful student. During the high tide of the World War the

¹ Claxton, U. S. Commissioner of Education, in the *Civic Journal*, April, 1921.

money cost alone to the United States was about twenty-four million dollars a day, or an amount sufficient to erect a schoolhouse in every county in Kentucky, every hour, at a cost of \$8,333.00 each. The cost of one big 16-inch port gun will erect a schoolhouse in every county in Kentucky at a cost of \$4,160.00 each. A small percent of the extravagance of peace and the waste of war would give a college education to every normal person in America.

Mining Industries.—It will be found that the development of mind and the development of the resources of a country go hand-in-hand. The reader should not wonder, therefore, that while Kentucky has been backward in supporting a great system of public schools many material resources have likewise remained undeveloped. It is not strange that along with the educational revival has come the recent development of the wealth of the State. Within the mountain walls of eastern Kentucky lay inexhaustible deposits of coal, oil, clays and ores, that, until recently, had been scarcely touched. During the last ten years the mining industry of this section has gone forward with a bound. Numerous towns have sprung up, railroads and turnpikes have been built and the whole mountain region has awakened from its long slumber. The wealth of the mountain section now threatens to rival that of any other part of the State. Capitalists who are developing this region own most of the coal lands, towns and hotels, and control the merchandise trade. They are building paved streets, sewers, electric light plants, and liberally supporting public schools. Writing of these mountain towns in 1922, Mr. Armentrout

says, "These quaint, well lighted, well drained, well governed cities, set down in the heart of the wilderness, have brought a new day to the mountains." Many aliens are now pouring into this industrial section and the population is rapidly increasing. New blood, new enterprises, better ways of living, good schools and



OIL FIELD IN WARREN
COUNTY

Oil Gusher on Fire.
Oil Tanks.



many other adjuncts of progress are rapidly changing the mountain region into a new order of civil life. With this development have come new problems—the assessment of just taxes on this hidden wealth, the education of the increasing population, and the Americanization of the alien miners. The mountain barriers are breaking down and the interests of the mountain section socially, politically and economically are being joined with those of every other section of the commonwealth. The mountain inhabitants have caught a

new vision and a new spirit, and when the dormant talent of these hardy, strong-minded people is once aroused there will be a new day in a New Kentucky.

Oil was discovered by a Mr. Beatty while drilling a well for salt water in McCreary County in 1819. It was first called rock oil and was sold as a cure-all for the diseases of animals and man. A steady and profitable production of petroleum did not begin in Kentucky until 1916, but since that time there has been a rapid development of the industry in widely separated parts of the State. The value of the products of oil and gas in Kentucky in 1919 was over twenty-three million dollars, that of coal over seventy-two millions. Kentucky ranks thirty-sixth in size among the States and fifteenth in population, but it ranks tenth in mineral products. It stands fifth in the production of soft coal, and second in the production of asphalt and fluor spar. Besides these, it has vast quantities of building stone, clays and useful minerals. But all the fertility of soil, all the wealth of agriculture, all the oil, coal, clay, and stone need the quickening touch of the trained hand and educated mind to bring Kentucky to the front in material prosperity. "With hammer and transit, instead of flint-lock rifles, explorers are still discovering Kentucky."¹

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Account for the delay of Kentucky in founding a good public school system. What laws were enacted that improved the schools of the State? What effect have good public schools upon the prosperity of a State? To what extent did private schools and colleges supply the

¹ Armentrout, "An Inventory of Kentucky."

needs of education? Compare the cost of education and war. Tell about the mineral resources of Kentucky. Why was the development of the resources of the State delayed so long?

CHAPTER XLVI

WAR, WASTE AND PROGRESS

IN 1914, the most bloody and destructive war ever known broke out in Europe and before its close every great nation of the earth was drawn into it. The people of America opposed the war and for more than two years they bore many insults and injuries from Germany. In vain the United States urged peace and justice. In vain she endeavored to remain neutral, but the wicked acts of Germany in sinking many American vessels, and the drowning of thousands of innocent men, women and children called forth a declaration of war April 6, 1917. All the wealth and man power of the nation was speedily organized to assist the allies who were now fighting with their backs to the wall to save civil liberty from a world-wide despotism. Nearly five million men were enlisted in the different branches of the service by the close of the war in 1919. Although Kentucky is situated near the center of our great country, although three thousand miles of sea separates America from Europe, the blight of the terrible conflict fell upon the State. Nearly one hundred thousand of the fittest young men of Kentucky enlisted in the war. Three thousand gave up their lives, and four thousand were wounded

in battle. Many have returned to civil life with shattered ideals and broken in health. True to her traditions of the rights of man, Kentucky entered loyally into every activity of the war, and "work or fight" became the law and the slogan of the State. Every war drive for troops, the buying of government bonds, raising Red Cross funds, furnishing food for the hungry allies, and every thrift campaign for economy of food and money "went over the top."

Besides the loss of 256,000 Americans killed or wounded in battle, over 57,000 died of diseases. Besides enormous sums loaned to the Allies, the money cost alone of the war for twenty-five months amounted to about twenty-two billions of dollars. Greater still is the loss that has come from economic confusion, crime, political revolution, and the loss of the noble ideals of civil life. The enormous money cost of the war to the United States was twenty-two times as much as the Nation spent for public education in 1920. Pensions of soldiers and interest on the enormous war debt have fixed a heavy tax-burden upon the people for many years to come. This burden of debt and taxes has been laid upon the shoulders of the innocent by a ruthless violator of the rights of man who drove a peace-loving people into a bloody struggle "to make the world safe for democracy." Passion, and the rage of ambition have failed to learn that the victories of peace are cheaper, as well as greater, than the victories of war.

Roads.¹—It is pleasant to turn from the destructive

¹ Acknowledgment is due Mr. E. G. Dent of Bowling Green for valuable information on Kentucky roads.

forces of war to the constructive work of peace and to compare some of the costs of each. Let us consider first the development of good roads, which are the highways of progress and the gateways of traffic and travel between civilized lands. Savages, whose chief business is war, have only blind trails through forests and across plains. These are sufficient for the needs of their wild life, but buffalo trails and warrior paths do not answer the needs of civilized men. The early settler was scarcely established in his cabin before he turned his attention to the opening and improving of roads and the navigation of the streams. One of the acts of the first legislature in 1792 provided for the opening of new roads. It appointed commissioners and provided for county taxes and subscriptions to carry on the work. Another act was passed in 1794 to establish a road from Madison Court House to Hazel Patch, to be paid for out of the State Treasury. Thus Kentucky began the construction of roads as a state project at an early date. In 1830, Henry Clay secured the passage of an act by Congress for establishing interstate highways by Federal aid. This act was vetoed by President Jackson, but the measure attracted national attention and laid the foundation for future internal improvements. Many roads were built in the State between 1850 and 1860. About this time, the counties began building highways, and the State abandoned its road building program until the coming of the automobile made the construction of interstate roads a state and national necessity. The railroads that were built at this time likewise partially supplied the need for highways, and stopped the oper-

ation of many of the picturesque stagecoach lines that threaded the State. In 1912, the State organized a Department of Public Roads to direct and advise in their construction. Two years later the Legislature provided for a state road fund to aid in the building of highways connecting county seats. Robert C. Terrell was appointed Road Commissioner, and the United States Department of Public Roads appointed E. H. Barber, of Frankfort, to assist in organizing the Department for its new work. Surveys and plans for uniform road building were made. In 1915 and 1916 work began on all roads surveyed. By 1916 twenty-eight counties had voted, under the Acts of the Legislature of 1914, for a total of \$5,755,000.00 in road bonds. From 1915 to 1917 the working of convicts on public roads was tried but it proved unsatisfactory and was abandoned. An act of the Legislature passed in 1917, authorized any county to vote a tax of twenty cents on each \$100.00 of assessed valuation of property, to construct roads and bridges. Up to the present time thirty five counties have voted taxes under this law. The disturbing effect of the World War hindered the improvement of roads for several years, but in 1920 the Legislature passed an important road measure. It created a non-partisan State Highway Commission and gave to it authority to direct the improving and building of State Roads. The law made the State Highway Engineer the executive officer of the Commission. The income for state road building for 1923 is nearly \$8,000,000.00 and under the leadership of the present engineer, Joseph S. Boggs, the Highway Commission is setting about the building

of an extensive system of state highways. The sum now available for the building of public roads is larger than for any previous time, but it is too small to give to Kentucky as great a system of roads as the needs of the State require. The Congress of 1916 made available Federal funds to aid in the building of rural post roads and thus the dream of Henry Clay is gradually coming true. The cost of the World War to the United States would build 2,185,000 miles of turnpike at a cost of \$10,000.00 per mile. This is equal to 728 great highways across the United States from the Atlantic to the Pacific. Kentucky's part of the war debt would pay her present annual road bills for over forty years—such is the high cost of war and the low cost of civil progress. War destroys; peace builds good roads, good schools and happy homes.

River Highways.—Rivers are the natural highways of any country and they perform an important part in the settlement and development of a new land. Kentuckians were interested from the beginning in the navigation of western streams. As early as 1793 the Legislature passed laws for clearing and opening to navigation some of the Kentucky streams. In 1801, The Kentucky River Company was chartered for the purpose of improving the navigation of any river in the State. Many laws were passed and appropriations were made from time to time to improve river navigation. Finally the Federal Government gave aid, and in the end took over the entire control of all navigable streams. Before the coming of railroads and turnpikes, the rivers of the State became the chief thoroughfares of trade and travel. Many prosperous

river towns sprang up, and a thriving river business was carried on. The demand for more rapid transportation and the building of numerous railroads have greatly reduced river traffic, and the busy and profitable days of steamboating, for the time, have passed. Probably the present high cost of railway operations, the increase in mining and manufactured products, and the improvement in methods of navigation will bring back the prosperous river business of former days. Including that part of the Ohio River bordering on Kentucky, the State has about 1,500 miles of navigable streams that offer free highways for the shipment of heavy freight to all parts of the Mississippi Valley and to the ports of the sea.

Manufacturing.—The great natural resources in coal, oil, timber, clays and ores furnish the basis for many manufacturing industries. The soil and climate of Kentucky favor the production of live stock, wool, hemp, grain, fruits and vegetables that furnish the raw products for numerous mills, packing houses and canning factories. All these resources await the quickening touch of capital and skilled labor to give the State an important place in commerce and manufacturing industries. The total value of the manufactured products of the State in 1919 was \$395,660,417.00, showing a gain in five years of nearly 72 per cent. This gain, however, is due to the higher prices of manufactured articles as well as to the increased production of factories. Located near the territorial center of the United States, rich in soil and abounding in minerals and timber, the State ought to become one of the most thriving parts of the Union.

Forests and Timber.—The great wilderness of Kentucky was a source of wonder to the early settlers. But the wasteful destruction of the splendid forests that has gone on for over a century has been a source of much loss to the State. The soil and climate of Kentucky favor the growth of fine timber. Much of the area of the State is unsuited to agricultural purposes, but under a good system of forestry it would yield a rich reward of wealth and landscape beauty. All the forest lands are privately owned, except one small State Reservation in Harlan County. “For many years Kentucky has been one of the chief producers of hardwood timber, and in 1919 it ranked sixth among the States in the production of these woods.”¹ From 1909 to 1917 the production of timber fell off 60 per cent, and year by year the output decreases. Trees preserve the hilly soils, produce a wealth of timber, modify the climate and add beauty to the landscape. It is to be regretted that the State has failed to sustain an efficient system of forestry. The Legislature of 1920 even took a backward step by combining the office of the Commissioner of Forestry with that of Agriculture, and abolishing the office of Assistant Forester. Under the skilful management of a Department of Forestry, properly financed and equipped, Kentucky would produce an abundance of fine hardwood timber. The past century of reckless waste of this great source of wealth and beauty should teach every Kentuckian the need to preserve what remains and to plant and cherish trees.

¹ U. S. Census Report of 1920.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

Give an account of the part that Kentucky had in the World War. How much did it cost our Government? Compare the cost of war and the arts of peace. Give an account of the development of roads in the State. Give a history of the river highways. Why has manufacturing been retarded in Kentucky? What has become of the wonderful forests that once covered the State? In what way has Kentucky failed to preserve her timber resources?

CHAPTER XLVII

POLITICS, PROBLEMS AND POPULATION

IN 1919 Edwin P. Morrow and Thruston Ballard, Republican candidates for Governor and Lieutenant



GOVERNOR EDWIN P. MORROW

Governor, respectively, were elected over the Democratic ticket led by James D. Black. In 1920, Richard P. Ernst, Republican, defeated J. C. W. Beckham for the United States Senate, but the State went democratic in the presidential election. During the administration of Governor Morrow a number of important changes were made in the affairs of the State. The Legislature of 1920, passed an act placing the

prisons and charitable institutions under a bi-partisan Board of Control. Under this act the evils of petty politics have been removed from the management of

these institutions. This change has also resulted in a better management of the institutions and a more humane treatment of the inmates. Medical inspection, the treatment of diseased bodies and minds, more sanitary quarters and better food and clothing have relieved these unfortunate beings and added a ray of hope and sunshine to their darkened lives. Important road measures and educational bills were likewise passed. Under these laws a better system of roads and schools may now be rapidly developed. The Legislature of 1922 passed a Co-operative Marketing Law which provided for the legal formation of companies and associations of producers to market the products of the State. The use of this law is to secure to the producer a better reward for the products of his labor through selling agencies under his control.

Civil Disturbances.—Recent mob violence at Lexington and labor troubles at Newport and Corbin were suppressed by the heroic efforts of the Governor and the State troops under his command. At Newport the soldiers destroyed many stills, hundreds of barrels of illicit liquor, and much gambling equipment, all of which had been largely the cause of the disturbance.

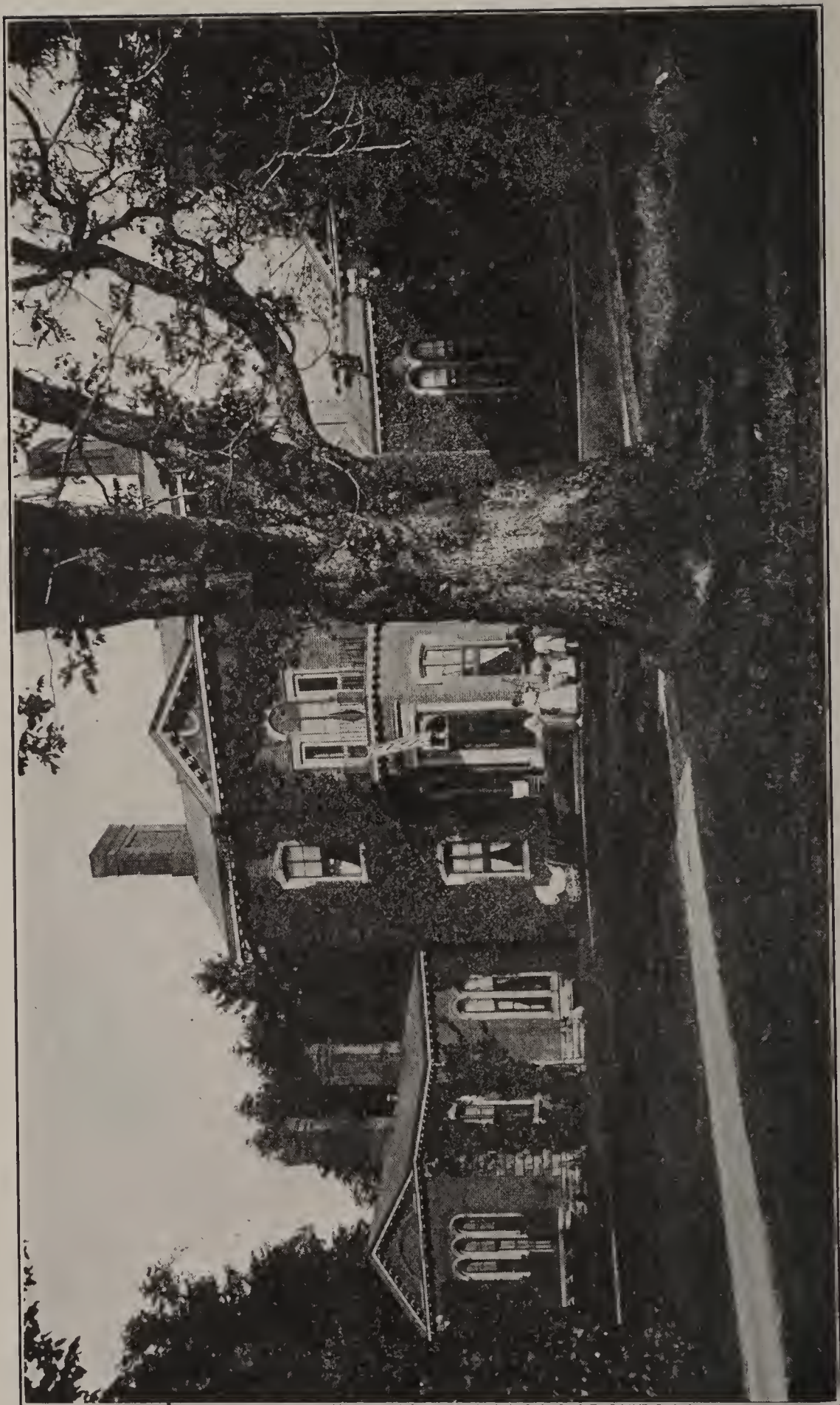
Many important problems present themselves to the State at this time. Better roads, better schools, economy in government and greater industrial development are every-day topics of the people. For many years, Kentucky has been the victim of political factions and petty politics, but the people are weary of such folly and are demanding more business and less political dishonesty in the government of the State. The platform pledges of all parties have been

full of fine promises, but the deeds of each administration have been disappointing. The vengeful eyes of the voter are upon the professional politician and the hired lobbyist who haunt the state legislative halls and executive offices seeking political favors or the protection of some big business at the cost of the taxpayer. The people are demanding a "business administration" to pull them out of political tangles and to introduce better business methods into the management of state affairs. Year by year new conditions arise and new departments of government are created to meet them. Education, public health, charities, crime, industries and their numerous departments must be conducted to meet growing social and business needs. Modern advancement has made modern government a bigger and more difficult problem than ever before. Kentucky, today, needs big, intelligent, patriotic leaders more than all things else.

Population.—The population of Kentucky in 1920 was 2,416,630 which represented an increase of 5½ per cent in ten years. There are more people in Chicago than in the entire State of Kentucky, and over twice as many in the city of New York. Several western states, settled after Kentucky, now surpass her in population. The interested reader may wonder why this has occurred. It should be remembered that Kentucky was settled by a pioneering people, many of whom swept on with the westward movement. Like the tide of the Ohio that merely touches the Kentucky shores, the tide of immigration has moved on. A study of the census will show that from 20 to 25 per cent of native born Kentuckians were living at the end

of each decade in other states, and that an exceedingly small per cent of the population were born outside of Kentucky.

Kentuckians as Leaders.—It has been said in preceding pages that Kentuckians are an aggressive, strong-minded people, the type which colonizes new countries, builds cities and establishes new states. It is this type that furnishes the leaders in all great enterprises. Kentucky's scattered sons have become leaders in many states, especially of the West. By 1920, fifty-five native Kentuckians had been elected governors of other states. It has furnished to Missouri alone ten governors, to Illinois seven, and to all other states thirty-eight. Besides these, fifty of her adopted sons have likewise become the chief executives of other commonwealths. Many of the Congressmen and Senators from other states also have been native Kentuckians. Both of the present United States Senators from the State and all of the Representatives except one are native Kentuckians. Besides these, there are now three native Kentuckians in the Senate and three in the House of Representatives from other states. Had this strong tide of human power remained to increase its population and develop its resources, the story of Kentucky's progress would have been different. It should be remembered, also, that the Kentucky settlers belonged to a rural, land-loving class that was not given to the founding of cities and establishing of commercial and manufacturing enterprises which produce great wealth and invite population. Even at the present time, 74 per cent of the population lives in rural communities.



“ASHLAND.” THE HOME OF HENRY CLAY

Some Great Families.—Mention has been made of many noted families that have given distinction to Kentucky. It is doubtful if any commonwealth in the Union, in proportion to population, can show as many long lines of distinguished men.¹ Doubtless there have been just as many distinguished women, but Kentucky chivalry has chosen to adore its fair women instead of honoring them with the opportunity of leadership. Old traditions, however, have broken down and among our great leaders of today are found many women. The blood of three of the most distinguished families, the McDowells, Clays and Harts, blended to make one of Kentucky's greatest women, Mrs. Madeline McDowell Breckinridge.



MRS. MADELINE MCDOWELL
BRECKINRIDGE

Though delicate in body, Mrs. Breckinridge was brilliant and heroic in mind. She became a national leader in the cause of woman suffrage. In 1896 she ably assisted her husband's distinguished father, W. C. P. Breckinridge, in his sound money campaign. In oratory she had the charm and power of her great ancestor, Henry Clay; in her devotion to the good of humanity she dis-

¹ The Breckinridges, McDowells, Clarks, Johnstons, Lewises, Caldwells and many other prominent families noted in the history of Kentucky were of Scotch-Irish stock.

played all the noble impulses of the McDowells. Her efforts were largely devoted to the care and education of poor children and to the prevention and cure of tuberculosis. When she died in 1920, resolutions of sorrow were passed by leagues, clubs, boards of education and many other organizations throughout America. The niche she fills in history honors her ancestors and those of her distinguished husband. In life she loved herself last; in death she was mourned by all. It has been largely through the noble efforts of great Kentucky women that the blight of intemperance has been removed and many reforms have been brought about. Ellen Semple, Fannie Macaulay (Frances Little) and Alice Hegan Rice, all Kentucky women, have become well-known writers.

The State has produced many men who have become authors and journalists. Among these are James Lane Allen, Henry T. Stanton, Theodore O'Hara, Cale Young Rice, John Fox, Jr., Madison Cawein, George D. Prentice, Irvin S. Cobb and Henry Watterson. As a journalist, prior to the Civil War, Prentice was without a peer in America, besides he was gifted as a poet. Following the war the *Louisville Courier and Journal* were united and Henry Watterson became the editor in chief. Until his death in 1921, Watterson was the outstanding figure in Kentucky Journalism. His editorials were quoted by newspapers throughout the world, and he was recognized as the greatest editor in America.

Irvin S. Cobb is one of the outstanding figures in American journalism at the present time, as well as a writer and lecturer of renown. As an eminent pub-

licist both before and after America's entry into the Great War, he gave out much of the information on European governments and the armies at the front, but, above all, he is perhaps our greatest living humorist, and his numerous works of fiction, particularly his short stories, enjoy an international reputation.



HENRY WATTERSON,
Kentucky's Greatest Journalist

IRVIN S. COBB,
Kentucky's Greatest Humorist

Under the right development of the strong-minded people of Kentucky the record of the future men and women of the State should not be less brilliant than those of the past.

Unrest.—At present, a state of confusion and great unrest exists throughout the world which seems to be rushing forward as if bent upon its own destruction. What is to come out of the present tangle of things,

and the part Kentucky is to play in the drama, remains to be recorded by some future historian. Great leaders who can blaze new trails through the present wilderness of doubt are most needed. Probably these leaders will come, as they have always come in times of great emergencies, and Kentucky and the world will swing into the broad light of a new and better day.

QUESTIONS AND SUGGESTIONS.

What was the result of the election of 1919? What important acts of the Legislature were passed in 1920? What civil disturbances occurred during Governor Morrow's administration? What are some of the problems that confront the people? Why has the growth of population been retarded? Show how Kentuckians have become leaders in other states? Name some of the families which have furnished many great leaders. What can you say of Kentucky's great women? Name some of Kentucky's distinguished writers. In what ways do you think the past history of the State will differ from that of the future?

THEN AND NOW

CHAPTER XLVIII

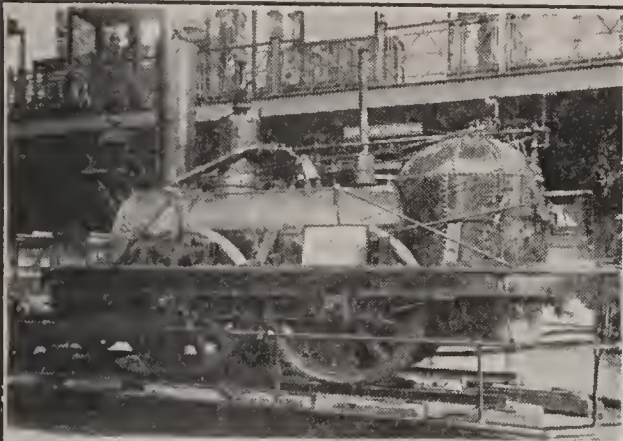
A REVIEW OF ONE HUNDRED AND FORTY-EIGHT YEARS

ONE hundred and thirty-one years have passed since Kentucky entered the Union, and one hundred and forty-eight years since its settlement began. During this span of time Kentucky had a heroic share in the setting up of a mighty Republic on a new continent. Here in America, Freedom has set to the oppressed of all the earth a shining example of the rights of man. Through the conflicts of ideas between right and wrong, through the battle strife of six wars, our State and our Union have come. From the beginning of our country, Liberty has steadily borne aloft her torch, and by its shining rays has shown our leaders and the people the true road to peace and progress.

It is well to close our story of Kentucky by noting the changes that have come about since its settlement one hundred and forty-eight years ago. How different, how strangely different, then and now! Within this time endless savage-haunted forests have given place to cleared stretches of fertile lands, dotted with cities and towns; rude log huts, to splendid residences and marble mansions; winding trails, to broad macadamized roads and steel railways; pack-horses and ox-

carts, to electric cars, automobiles and all manner of wheeled vehicles. No more is seen the bark canoe and the slow-moving flatboats, but in their stead the numerous waterways are covered with swift-flying launches and steamboats, carrying on the busy traffic and travel of a new day. From the noiseless dip of the Indian's paddle, from the dream of poor John Fitch a hundred years before, have come the splash of flying wheels and the echoing signals of steamboat whistles down the valleys of every Kentucky river. No more from these busy shores fly the deer, elk, and buffalo, for they too are gone, but in their stead herds of fine cattle, sheep and horses graze on meadow and hill. In place of the lonely blue line of smoke from the settler's cabin rise dense clouds of a thousand smokes from great factories and cities. There are no more mountain and ocean barriers. Once months passed between messages from foreign lands; now submarine cables and wireless radios flash the news of the world to every nation in an instant of time. The sails of slow-going ocean vessels have been replaced by great steamships, and swift-flying aeroplanes now dot the skies and cross the seas.

The pioneer kept his trusty rifle near him while he plowed the newly-cleared field with a rude wooden plow, but the whistling boy a hundred and forty-eight years later rides a steel gang-plow and turns the self-same soil ten times faster and as many times better. Now one machine harvests the grain faster than a thousand pioneer sickles, and a steam mill turns it into fine flour faster than ten thousand hand mills of those border days.



CARRIERS ONE HUNDRED YEARS AGO AND NOW

“ From the scene hath gone the settler—
Gone the forest from the hills—
Gone the forts beside the river—
Gone the ancient water mills.
Cattle graze where once the wigwam
Curled aloft its wreaths of smoke,
Steamboat whistles now awaken
Echoes which the oars awoke.

.

He is gone—the hardy settler,
Gone the humming spinning wheel,
With its mellow plaintive music,
As the flax sang on the reel.”¹

Gone are the old log taverns, and in their places rise palatial hotels; gone are the ill-smelling stores filled with pelts of animals and coarse merchandise, and in their stead rise towering department stores that exchange for currency and gold the products of every land.

The manner of living, mode of dress, habits and customs, all have changed to a new order. With the rude cabins have gone the rude furniture, rude pots and kettles for cooking a few coarse foods around the wide hearthstones; in their places are burnished ranges upon which are prepared an endless variety of wholesome foods and delicacies from every climate of the earth. Wooden and pewter tableware has given place to china and silver; bare boards to mahogany tables dressed with the finest linens. The apparel of a century ago—the deer-skin hunting shirt and leggings, the coarse linsey-woolsey, cut to curious

¹ “The Kentucky Pioneers,” C. E. Blevins.

shapes and patterns are now but the curios of by-gone days.

Not less wonderful are the changes that have come about in the social, moral, and religious conduct of the people. A simple rustic life of hardships and rude joys has given place to one of many dazzling pleasures of the senses. Old standards of conduct have passed, and new and more artificial ones have been set up. Even the simple sports of that early day have changed to those of a complex and scientific kind. Bloody fistic combats, "gouging,"¹ dueling, and other brutal customs have come under the ban of the law and of society. In their places, too often, the hot word is followed by a blow, or the flash of a weapon, and probably a tragedy.

The old private school, the log schoolhouse, the pioneer teacher, the brief course of study, and old school methods likewise have vanished, and a good system of public schools for all the children of all the people has taken their places. Manuscript arithmetics, hymn books, a few school books, and various kinds of printed matter that made up their texts for study have been replaced by beautifully illustrated and well graded text-books for every child. Then a few children dressed in homespun sat upon rough-hewn puncheon slabs about a wide, stone fireplace, while cold winds shivered through open chinks in log walls; now they rest in model, hygienic seats, row by row, in great steam-heated buildings of brick and stone. Then only rude elementary courses of study were pro-

¹Persons fighting sometimes endeavored to gouge out each other's eyes.

vided; now free high schools and university courses are open to all. Then magazines and newspapers were rare and expensive; now great steam presses are turning out a flood of books and periodicals that can be had for a few pennies. Instead of the slow-going post that at long intervals brought meager news to the pioneer settlements, many swift-flying trains now reach almost hourly every town and city in the State, and the rural postman's whistle may be heard on every country road.

The pioneer circuit riders, those "Cavaliers of the cross," who blew their gospel trumpets far out on the border, laid the religious foundation of the State. They were full of the spirit of the Master and many of them were able educators and eloquent divines. They gathered their flocks in the shadows of the groves or beneath brush arbors and delivered sermons filled with gospel fervor. But they, too, are gone. In their places a century later others stand and preach to larger congregations in fine churches and cathedrals. Once the untrained voices of the backwoods people joined in the solemn hymns and cried "amens" to long prayers; now deep-toned organs and paid choirs render music for waiting throngs. The culture of science, art, and literature has invaded the church, and the form of religion has changed. Much has been gained; how much has been lost in the religious movements of the century, must be left for the thoughtful reader to say. Religion is the experience of the inner lives of the people that shows itself in their conduct, and in their institutions. Judged by this standard, spiritual progress has been made.

Within a century homes for the orphan, the poor, the aged, and the unfortunate have been founded; hospitals for the sick and asylums for the insane have been established; schools of reform have taken the place of dungeons for the youthful criminal. These institutions have come in response to the wish of the people and are supported and controlled by the State. Working hand-in-hand with the churches are numerous kindred organizations, such as the Young Men's Christian Association, the Knights of Columbus, The Woman's Christian Temperance Union, and numerous benevolent societies. Leagues and clubs of various kinds, and numerous other groups are working for the physical and moral good of themselves and of society. Religion is a civilizing and refining power, and no state is strong that is weak in the Spirit of worship and the universal brotherhood of man.

The political ideals during these years, for the most part, remained unchanged. The great principles of liberty, and the rights of man are still dear to the heart of every Kentuckian. How to apply these principles in justice to all and do violence to none sometimes becomes a difficult problem in government. In a closely organized society where there are so many institutions for the public good, personal liberty and private rights must sometimes yield to the general welfare of the State. In our Government every person is a part of the State; therefore, the good of one is the good of all. For this reason, parents are now required to educate their children, all persons are forbidden to brew and possess intoxicating beverages, or to hunt and fish without restraint. These and many

other laws under which we now live were unknown to early Kentuckians. New inventions, new discoveries, large cities, crowded population, and new industries have called for new laws to regulate society and protect the people. Thus the few simple rules of pioneer days have been changed into many confusing and complex laws of the present time. Such is the penalty the individual must pay to a highly civilized life. There is but little to restrain the wild life of the savage—he is the freeman—but not so with the citizen of a civilized State where the rights and welfare of all are bound together for the common good.

We who enjoy the comforts of modern life, who sit in an easy chair and read the story of the Kentucky pioneers by a light as bright as a sunbeam, little dream of the pale flame of their dim grease lamps, and the crude and harsh surroundings they endured. The explorer and pathfinder came first to map the unknown land and to blaze trails for the settler who was soon to follow. Clad in the garb of the backwoodsman, with the rifle to procure his food and drive back the savage, and the ax to hew down the forest and build his log cabin, the settler laid the foundation of all our modern life, its joys and comforts. Amid the stress of war with the savages and a foreign foe, the pioneers built their rustic homes and fortresses, cleared the land, tilled the soil, and carved a great state out of the wilderness. The rude forest warfare is over, and the dull crack of the flint-lock rifle and the war whoop of the savage are heard no more; now the agents of human destruction dash through the air, dive beneath the sea, or send tons of death-dealing projectiles

against steel ships and fortresses twenty miles away. Through the trials of many wars, through political hopes and fears, through the changing scenes of many years Kentucky never lost sight of her great motto: "*United We Stand, Divided We Fall.*" Oh the hopes, the joys, the fears and the work of it all! We who enjoy the heritage left us by the founders and builders of Kentucky should bear the torch aloft and "carry on" as it becomes the descendants of a race of heroes.

1730

CHAPTER XLIX

THE CONSTITUTION OF KENTUCKY

(Note to the Teacher)

The Kentucky Constitution is a very lengthy, legal instrument and difficult to understand. For this reason it is believed that it is more practical to devote a chapter to explaining the most important features of it than to quote the entire Constitution without comment. As nearly as possible, the exact language of the Constitution is used in explaining it. This chapter may be omitted, or studied in connection with civil government, as the teacher may deem best. For convenience, the topics have been treated in the order of their arrangement in the Constitution.

History of the Constitution

Kentucky has had four constitutions. The first was adopted in 1792, the second in 1799, the third in 1850, and the fourth, which is now in force, was adopted in 1891. The general principles of government in these several constitutions have remained the same, but new conditions arising from time to time have made many changes necessary. The Constitution is the fundamental law of the State which attempts to safeguard the rights of its citizens, and to prevent any sudden and unwise enactment of laws by the General Assembly. The framers of the Constitution in their zeal to safeguard the rights of the people have made it very difficult to amend or revise it, and it can be changed only by a vote of the legislature and the people. (See topic near the end of this chapter.)

The Preamble

The preamble sets forth the general purpose of the Constitution as follows:

We, the people of the Commonwealth of Kentucky, grateful to Almighty God for civil, political, and religious liberties we enjoy, and invoking the continuance of these blessings, do ordain and establish this Constitution.

Bill of Rights

The Constitution, like that of the United States, provides for a Bill of Rights, and three departments of government, the Legislative,

Executive and the Judicial.¹ The bill of rights sets forth the principles that all men are politically free and equal and that they have the right to enjoy and defend their lives and liberties, to worship God according to their own ideas, to seek safety and happiness, to express their opinions in public and private, to be protected in acquiring and holding of property, and to assemble in a peaceable manner to make known their wishes by petition, address, or remonstrance. It also protects them in their right to bear arms in a lawful way, and makes them secure in their personal liberty and freedom.

No special rights shall be granted, and no property shall be free from taxes except as provided by the Constitution. No preference shall be shown to any religious sect or order or interference in any mode of worship, nor does any person's religious belief or non-belief affect his political rights. The bill of rights guarantees free elections, freedom of speech and freedom of the press. However, any person may be brought to trial for slander or libel, and may be punished if found guilty. Every person is secure in person and property from seizure except in a legal manner, and in all cases of criminal prosecutions the accused has a right to a fair and speedy trial by jury. No person shall, when found guilty or innocent, be twice tried for the same offense, and all courts shall be open to every person to secure his lawful right.

All prisoners shall be bailable except for capital offenses, and the writ of *habeas corpus* shall not be suspended unless in time of rebellion or invasion when public safety may require it. Excessive bail, fines, and cruel punishments are not allowed. No law can be passed for the punishing of crimes after they have been committed, nor shall any law be passed that changes the obligations of contracts. No person shall be charged with treason or felony by the General Assembly—these are crimes that shall be tried by the courts.

The bill of rights further provides that no standing army in time of peace shall be maintained without the consent of the General Assembly; that the military shall at all times be under the civil power; that no soldiers in time of peace shall be quartered in any house except with the consent of the owner, nor, in time of war, except in a manner provided by law.

The General Assembly is not allowed to grant any title of nobility, for all persons are regarded as citizens who shall have equal political rights.

Emigration from the State shall not be prohibited and slavery and compulsory servitude are forbidden except as a punishment for crime. No violation of the Constitution shall be allowed, and all laws contrary to it shall be void.

¹ The first ten amendments made to the Federal Constitution are now regarded as a bill of rights.

Departments of Government

There are three departments of the state government and each of them is a separate body, none of which shall exercise any power belonging to the other except as may be provided by the Constitution.

The Legislative Department.—This department consists of a House of Representatives and a Senate which together is called the General Assembly. The representatives are elected for two years and the senators for four. Every two years one representative is elected from each representative district, and one senator from each of one half of the senatorial districts. A representative must be a citizen of Kentucky who has reached the age of twenty-four years, and who has resided in the State at least two years next preceding his election, and one year in the county or city from which he is chosen. A senator must be at least thirty years old, a resident of the State at least six years next preceding his election, and for one year a resident of the district from which he is chosen.

The General Assembly is required to divide the State as nearly equal as possible in population, into thirty-eight senatorial districts, and into one hundred representative districts. It is further required to redistrict the State every ten years in such a manner as to keep the population as nearly equal as may be in each district. One hundred representatives and thirty-eight senators shall, at all times, compose the General Assembly.

The Lieutenant Governor is president of the Senate, but the House of Representatives chooses its own speaker. The General Assembly convenes every two years, on the first Monday of January. A majority of the members of each House constitutes a quorum to do business, but a minority may compel the attendance of the absent members.

Each House shall judge of the qualifications of its members, determine the rules of its proceedings, punish a member for misconduct, and by a two-thirds vote may expel him. Neither House shall adjourn for more than three days without the consent of the other. A session of the Legislature is limited to sixty days, not including holidays and Sundays, and the compensation for each member shall be five dollars a day and fifteen cents per mile for necessary travel in going to and returning from the session of the Assembly. The salaries of the members of the General Assembly may be changed by law, provided no changes shall take effect during the session at which it is made.

Members of the General Assembly are not subject to arrest during a session of the Legislature except for treason, felony and a breach of the peace. No member is allowed to hold another civil office during his term of office as a legislator, nor to accept any office for a year thereafter that may have been created by the General Assembly of which he was a member.

To become a law, a bill must be reported by a committee, read on three different days in each House, and must receive the votes of at least two-fifths of the members elected to each House, and a majority of the members voting. But any bill to appropriate money or to create a debt must receive the votes of the majority of all the members elected to each House. All bills for the raising of revenue must originate in the House of Representatives. The Governor has the power to veto any bill. (See Executive Department, this chapter.)

The General Assembly has the power to contract debts and to raise revenues for the State within limitations prescribed by the Constitution. Beyond these limitations it is necessary to submit the incurring of other debts to a vote of the people. No act, except general appropriation bills passed in cases of emergency, shall become a law until ninety days after the adjournment of the session at which it was passed. The reasons for the emergency must be set forth in the bill which will become a law as soon as it is signed by the Governor. All bills must be signed by the presiding officer of each House in open session, and by the Governor before they become laws: provided a bill may become a law if passed over the Governor's veto.

Local and Special Legislation.—The Constitution prohibits the General Assembly from passing local or special acts, for all laws enacted must be for the common good of the people. The rules and practice of all courts, the obtaining of juries, the trials and punishments of criminals, the assessment of fines, and all other legal proceedings must be conducted under general laws in order to give to all the people of the State uniform legal rights. Laws governing individuals and corporations, towns, cities, highways, the protection of fish and game, the management of schools, and all other matters must not be made for the special interest of any, but for the general good of all.

Impeachments.—The House of Representatives has the sole power of impeachment (to charge with an offense) but all charges brought by the House shall be tried by the Senate. It requires two-thirds of the senators present to convict. The Governor and all civil officers are liable to impeachment for any wrongdoing in office. If found guilty, such persons are removed from office and disqualified to hold any office of honor and trust under the State. Such persons may also be tried by law and punished if found guilty.

The Executive Department.—The head of the executive department of the State is the Governor. He is elected for a term of four years and cannot succeed himself the four years following his term of office. He must be at least thirty years old and a resident of the State for at least six years next preceding his election. His salary is fixed by law. He is commander-in-chief of the army and navy of the State, except when they are called into the service of the United States. He has the power to fill vacancies until such vacancies are filled by elections or otherwise, to remit fines, commute sentences, grant re-

prieves and pardons. He may require written information from officers concerning their respective offices and the condition and welfare of the State. He shall give to the General Assembly information concerning the affairs of the State and recommend the passage of such laws as he may deem best. He may call an extra session of the Legislature by proclamation, but to consider only those subjects for which it was called.

A Lieutenant-Governor is chosen at the same time and in the same manner as the Governor, and must have the same qualifications. By virtue of his office, he is president of the Senate, and in case of the death, resignation or removal of the Governor he becomes his successor until another is duly elected and qualified. During the absence of the Governor from the State, or for any cause preventing him from discharging his duties, the Lieutenant-Governor becomes acting governor. If the Governor is placed on trial before the Senate, the Chief Justice of the Court of Appeals shall preside instead of the Lieutenant-Governor. The Senate shall elect a president *pro tempore* to act in the absence of the Lieutenant-Governor.

Every bill passed by the General Assembly must be sent to the Governor for his approval. If he signs it, it becomes a law, if not, he must return it with his objections to its passage. The General Assembly may still pass the bill over the Governor's veto by a vote of the majority of all the members elected to each house. If a bill is not returned by the Governor within ten days (Sundays and holidays excepted) after it has been presented to him, it shall become a law.

The treasurer, auditor, commissioners of agriculture, labor and statistics, secretary of state, attorney general and superintendent of public instruction shall be elected by the people for a term of four years. Each of these shall be at least thirty years of age at the time of his election, and a resident of the State for at least two years next preceding his election. None of these officers shall succeed himself the four years following the term of office to which he was elected.

Officers for Districts and Counties.—The Commonwealth's Attorney and the circuit court clerks are elected every six years. A county judge, county court clerk, county attorney, sheriff, jailer, coroner, surveyor, assessor, and county magistrates are elected every four years. These officers are elected by the people of the districts they serve and are subject to punishment for failing to perform their duties according to law. The compensation and duties of these officers are fixed by acts of the General Assembly.

The Judicial Department.—This branch of the state government consists of many courts which explain and interpret the Constitution and the laws of the State. The highest branch of the judiciary is the Court of Appeals which tries those cases that are appealed to it from the lower courts. The Court of Appeals holds all its sessions at

Frankfort, but like other departments of the government, it may meet in other places in case of war, insurrection or pestilence. The judges of the Court of Appeals are elected for eight years. At present, there are seven judges of the Court of Appeals. The Constitution provides there can never be less than five nor more than seven as may be determined by the General Assembly.

The General Assembly shall divide the State into seven districts as nearly equal in population as possible, and shall redistrict the State every ten years if necessary. One judge is elected from each of these districts. A clerk of the Court of Appeals is elected every four years by the people and he shall be ineligible for reelection the following term. As in all other departments of the state government the people are given a voice in the selection of the judicial officers.

Circuit Courts.—The circuit courts are nearer the people. The Constitution provides for the holding of circuit courts in every county, but the General Assembly shall by law regulate their authority and change or modify their rights. It is the duty of the General Assembly to divide the State into a sufficient number of circuit court districts to carry into effect the provisions of the Constitution. Each circuit court district shall elect a circuit judge every six years. The judges of the Court of Appeals and the circuit court judges may be removed by the Governor upon the recommendation of a two-thirds vote of the General Assembly.

At least three terms of circuit court shall be held in each county annually. The qualifications, duties, and penalties for misconduct in office are fixed by the Constitution, and by acts of the General Assembly. Circuit courts are organized and conducted so as to provide for a sufficient number to meet all the demands of the people, and to guarantee to every person an opportunity to bring his grievances into court for a just settlement. Circuit court cases may be carried to the Court of Appeals for final settlement. Some minor cases cannot be appealed.

Other Courts.—The Constitution further provides for a quarterly court, county court, magistrates court, police court and a fiscal court. The organization and duties of each of these shall be uniform throughout the State that all the people may have equal privileges under the same laws. Each county is divided into a number of magisterial districts and a justice or magistrate is elected in each district.

The fiscal court consists of the county judge and the justices of the peace of that county. Or a county may have three commissioners elected from the county at large who with the county judge shall constitute the fiscal court of that county. The fiscal court has charge of the business and financial affairs of the county.

Suffrage and Elections.—Every citizen in Kentucky who is twenty-one years of age is entitled to vote: provided any person who has been convicted of treason, felony, bribery in an election, or of such

misdemeanors as the General Assembly shall declare, shall be deprived of the right to vote. The right of suffrage is a sacred privilege that should be enjoyed only by worthy citizens. Criminals who are in prison at the time of an election, idiots, and insane persons do not have the right to vote. Every other citizen who is at least twenty-one years of age, who has resided in the State one year, and in the county six months, and in the precinct sixty days next preceding the election shall be a voter in said district and not elsewhere.

The Constitution provides that all elections by the people shall be by secret ballot, and it gives to the General Assembly the power to make laws governing the holding of elections. The government of the State is by the consent of the people. Every voter, through his ballot, has a voice in the affairs of the State, and no one is permitted to interfere with his right. The Constitution and the laws of Kentucky endeavor to protect the voter in his right to a voice in his government, and to punish any person who may attempt to bribe or hinder him. Candidates likewise may be punished for attempting to secure their election to office by any unlawful means.

Vacancies in all offices for the state at large, or for districts larger than a county, are filled by appointment of the Governor; all other appointments are made under laws passed by the General Assembly. Since the General Assembly is a law making body no vacancies occurring in it shall be filled by appointment, but the General Assembly may provide laws for special elections to fill such vacancies.

Municipalities.—Cities and towns of the State are divided by the Constitution into six classes according to population. The General Assembly is given the power to enact laws governing the organization and management of each class, but all laws governing cities of a given class must be uniform. The Constitution fixes the maximum tax rate for all cities and towns except for school purposes, but the rate must be the same for all taxing districts of the same class. Counties and municipalities are prohibited by the Constitution from contracting debts beyond their annual income without the assent of two-thirds of the voters thereof, voting in an election held for that purpose. This provision safeguards the people against an undue burden of debt and taxes except by their consent.

Every county and municipality is given the right to self-government, limited only by the general provisions of the Constitution, and by acts of the Legislature. City government, like that of the state, is composed of three departments. The laws are made by the town board or council, executed by the mayor and police, and interpreted or administered by the city judges and attorneys. The intention of the Constitution and the general laws passed by the Legislature is to give every organized group of people as much self-government as possible, but all laws must conform to the requirements of the Con-

stitution and to the acts of the General Assembly for the general good of the Commonwealth.

Revenue and Taxation.—In order to provide money for running the state government a tax is laid upon property, but the Constitution exempts from taxation such as is used for public and religious purposes. Under this provision courthouses, asylums, charitable and educational institutions are exempt. Taxes must be levied for public purposes only, and must be uniform on all property of the same class. It is the duty of the General Assembly to enact laws for the assessment of property and the collection of taxes. It also has the power to fix a tax upon incomes, licenses and franchises. It may also authorize counties and cities to levy a poll tax not to exceed one dollar and fifty cents per head. The Constitution endeavors to equalize the tax burdens on all classes according to the value of property owned by each.

Education.—The Constitution requires the General Assembly to provide by law for a good system of common schools. These are supported by the income from certain school funds and from a uniform school tax. Each county receives from the State annually its school funds on a per capita basis. In distributing the school fund, no distinction is made on account of race or color, but separate schools for white and colored children must be maintained. The State University and State Normal Schools being a part of the public school system are supported out of the State school fund. None of the public school fund shall be used for private or sectarian schools. All children between the ages of seven and fourteen must attend some school. The law now provides for the levying of a local tax for the further support of local public schools.

Corporations.—Every corporation that does business in the State must file an acceptance of the requirements of the Constitution. No corporation is allowed to carry on any other business than that which is authorized by its charter or by the law under which it may be organized. Corporations must have at least one place of business, and at least one authorized agent within the State. All corporations are subject to suit and prosecution, and are in every way answerable to the laws of the State just as individuals. The transportation of freight and passengers on railroads, steamboats and other common carriers are regulated by general laws so as to prevent unjust treatment of any citizen. Common carriers are forbidden to grant free passes, or to make special freight rates, or to otherwise grant special privileges to any persons not in their employment. All trusts, pools and combinations for the purpose of unnaturally raising or lowering the value of any article are illegal.

Corporations are useful in the development of the wealth and resources of a State, but like individuals they must be governed by the Constitution and the laws of the Commonwealth. They are protected

in their rights and at the same time the people are protected from any injustice they might attempt.

Railroads and Commerce.—The Constitution provides for a “Railroad Commission” composed of three persons to be elected by the people. The duties of the Commission is to see that the laws concerning the railroad service to the people are properly observed. Railroads and other common carriers are prohibited from owning, leasing or managing factories, mines, or any other property or business except such as may be necessary to carry on their own affairs. These and other safeguards prevent a combination of powerful companies or commercial interests that might be harmful to the general welfare of the people.

The Militia.—Every able-bodied male citizen of the State between the ages of eighteen and forty-five, except such persons as may be exempt by law, may be called into the military service of the State. The General Assembly shall provide for an organized body of militia, to be equipped and disciplined, as far as possible, according to the regulations of the United States army. The Governor is made commander-in-chief of the army. The militia is a part of the police power of the State to preserve order and to put down mobs, riots and insurrections. During war the militia becomes a part of the United States army and is not then under the control of the Governor.

General Provisions.—There are many general provisions in the Constitution for the peace and safety of the people, and the conduct of the affairs of the State. Armed bodies of men are forbidden to enter the State except by consent of the Governor or the General Assembly. Lotteries and gift enterprises of a gambling sort are prohibited. Provisions are made for the punishment of judges, sheriffs and other officers for failure to perform their duties, or for misdemeanors in office. Officers of the law, members of the General Assembly, judges of the courts are required to take oath to support the Constitution of the State and of the United States, and to faithfully discharge their duties as officials.

Treason against the State consists in levying war against it, or in adhering to its enemies, giving them aid and comfort, and is punishable by law. All civil officers of the State at large must reside within it, and all other officers must reside within the towns, cities and districts they serve. The salaries of public officials shall not be changed during the term for which they were elected.

Challenging, accepting a challenge, or the fighting of a duel is punishable by law. Any person may be punished who by wrongful act, negligence or carelessness, may cause the death or injury of another.

A grand jury is composed of twelve men whose duty it is to inquire into the violation of the laws of the Commonwealth and to bring a charge, or indictment, against any offenders. If indicted the offender is brought to trial before the circuit court.

Amending and Revising the Constitution.—It requires three-fifths of all the members elected to each House of the General Assembly to propose an amendment to the Constitution. If passed by a three-fifths vote the amendment is then submitted to the people for their ratifications or rejection at the next general election. If a majority of the votes cast favor the amendment, then it shall become a part of the Constitution of the State, and shall be so proclaimed by the Governor. Not more than two amendments shall be voted on at one time, and they must be submitted so as to allow a separate vote on each, and no amendment shall relate to more than one subject. Before an amendment is submitted to a vote of the people it must be published at least ninety days before the vote is taken so the people may properly understand the change that is proposed.

To revise the Constitution, the General Assembly must pass an act by a majority vote of the members elected to each House calling for a convention to revise the Constitution. Then it will be necessary for the next General Assembly in like manner to favor the calling of a convention. If passed by each of the two sessions of the General Assembly it is then submitted to a vote of the people. If a majority of the people favor it, and the total number of votes cast is equal to one-fourth of the number of qualified voters who voted in the last preceding general election, the Secretary of State shall certify the same to the next General Assembly. It shall then be the duty of the General Assembly to call for a convention to readopt, revise or amend the Constitution. The Constitutional Convention shall consist of as many delegates as there are members in the House of Representatives and they must have the same qualifications and be elected from the same districts as the Representatives. It will be seen from the above provisions that the revision and amendment of the Constitution is a very slow and difficult task.

INDEX

- Abolition, movement, 238, 249.
 Adair, General John, 195, 210; in battle of New Orleans, 214; Governor of Kentucky, 220.
 Agriculture, development of, 315.
 Alien and Sedition Laws, 182.
 Allen, James Lane, quoted, 1, 63.
 Allen, John, 196, 197, 204, 205.
 Anderson, Robert, surrenders Fort Sumter, 262; commander Federal troops, 270, 274.
 Anglo-Saxon Settlers, 155.
 Anti-Federalist Party, 178, 256.
 Anti-Relief Party, 220, 222.
 Art and Artists, 236.
 Arthur, Gabriel, 17, 156.
- Backwoodsmen, 104.
 Ballard, Thurston, 334.
 Bank of Kentucky, 218.
 Banking, beginning of, 216.
 Barbour, Major Philip, 243.
 Bardstown, settled, 131.
 Barlow, Thomas, inventor, 235.
 Barry, William T., 208, 210, 223, 224; defeated for Governor, 227.
 Batts, Captain Thomas, 17.
 Beauregard (bō'rēh gard), General, 262.
 Beck, James B., 304.
 Beckham, J. C. W., 308, 309; elected Senator, 315; defeated, 334.
 Bell, Joshua, 252.
 Benton, Mortimer H., 292.
 Big Sandy Valley settled, 155; first explorers, 156; oldest town, 157.
 Black, James D., 315, 334.
 Blackburn, J. C. S., 304, 307.
 Blackburn, Governor Luke P., 304.
 Blennerhassett (blen er hās'et), Herman, 193, 194.
- "Bloody Monday," 251.
 Blue Licks, Battle of, 97.
 Boiling Springs settled, 41.
 Books and newspapers of pioneer days, 175.
 Boone, Daniel, 21; sketch of, 24; 38, 44, 56, 60, 65; captured, 67; escape, 69; 96, 156, 190; death of, 232.
 Boone, Squire, 26, 28, 67.
 Boonesborough settled, 45; attacked, 56; siege of, 69; fort, 70.
 Bowling Green settled, 159; Confederate capital, 277.
 Bowman, Joseph, 76.
 Boyle, John, Chief Justice, 221, 224.
 Boyle, Jeremiah T., 280, 290.
 Bradford, John, 148.
 Bradley, William O., elected Governor, 307, 308.
 Bragg, General Braxton, in Mexican War, 245; in Civil War, 286, 287.
 Bramlette, Governor Thomas, 289.
 Brank, Ephraim M., n. 213.
 Breathitt, John, elected Governor, 227.
 Breckinridge, John, 183.
 Breckinridge, John C., Vice President, 252; favors convention, 260; officer in Confederate army, 274.
 Breckinridge, Robert, 148.
 Breckinridge, Robert J., 293.
 Breckinridge, Mrs. Madeline McDowell, 339.
 Breckinridge, W. C. P., 339.
 Bristow, L. L., 313.
 British, invasion of Kentucky, 69; attacked by Clark, 77, 78; attack on Bryan's Station, 93;

- intrigues, 122, 152; tyranny of, 199.
- Broadhead, Daniel, 131; store, 131.
- Brown, James, 148.
- Brown, John, 116, 118, 126, 140, 141, 149.
- Brown, John Young, elected Governor, 305; defeated, 308.
- Brown, General Scott, 267.
- Bryan, William J., 307.
- Bryan's Station settled, 83; attacked by British and Indians, 93.
- Buchannan (bŭk an'an), James, Secretary of State, 246.
- Buchannan, Dr. Joseph, 236.
- Buckner, Simon Bolivar, 267, 272; surrenders Ft. Donelson, 278; elected Governor, 304; sound money candidate, 307.
- Buell, General Don Carlos, 278, 286, 287.
- Buena Vista, battle of, 244; heroes buried, 247.
- Bullitt, Alexander S., 148.
- Bullitt, Captain Thomas, 37, 75.
- Burbridge, Steven G., 290.
- Burnham, C. F., 297.
- Burr, Aaron, conspiracy of, 192-195; first trial, 195; arrest and second trial, 196; punishment of, 197.
- Butler, General Thomas, 143.
- Butler, William O., 237, 243.
- Caldwell, Captain William, 92.
- Callaway, Richard, 65; daughters captured, 66.
- Camden, Johnson, 314.
- Camp Wild Cat, battle of, 274.
- Capture of three girls, 66.
- Carlisle, John G., 300; Secretary of State, 306.
- Cawein, Madison, quoted, 221.
- Census of 1790, 137; of 1800, 189.
- Circuit Rider, the, 158.
- Civil Disturbances, 335.
- Civil War, The, 273-293.
- Clark, George Rogers, 50, 51, 72; sends spies, 73; plans an expedition, 72; results of, 81; builds fort, 87; punishes the Indians, 98, 128; aids Genet, 164-167; death of, 232.
- Clark, Judge James, 221; elected Governor, 237.
- Claxton, P. P., quoted, 323.
- Clay, Cassius M., abolitionist, 238; in Mexican War, 243, 244; candidate for Governor, 251.
- Clay, General Green, 207, 238.
- Clay, Henry, 181; defends Burr, 196; favors taking Canada, 201, 202; nominated for President, 225-226; called the "Great Commoner," 226; elected to U. S. Senate, 227; attitude to slavery, 240; against annexation of Mexico, 246; candidate for President, 248; last days, 249; death of, 250.
- Cobb, Irvin S., 341.
- Colleges, 322.
- Confederacy, fall of, 293.
- Confederate forces, in Kentucky, 274-288.
- Confederate generals, 276.
- Confederate government of Kentucky, 276.
- Connolly, Dr. John, 128.
- Constitution, first, 145; second, 185; third, 253; fourth, 304; outline of, 352.
- Corn Island settled, 74.
- Cornstalk, Indian chief, 38.
- Court Party and Country Party, 112, 118.
- Cox, W. H., 312.
- Critical Period, 106.
- Crittenden, George B., 275, 276.
- Crittenden, John J., in the battle of the Thames, 208; elected Governor, 248; Attorney General, 251; pleads for peace, 254, 260, 264.
- Crittenden, General Thomas, 270, 272, 275, 276.
- Crittenden, Colonel William L., leads filibustering expedition, 250.
- Cumberland Gap, named, 19; gateway to the West, 59-63.

- Cumberland Road, the, 230.
Cumberland Trace, 158.
- Danville, settlement of, 131; Conventions, 107-116; Political Club, 129.
- Daveiss, Joseph Hamilton, 195, 196; killed, 198.
- Davidge, Rezin H., 223.
- Davis, Garrett, 274.
- Davis, Jefferson, in Mexican War, 245; sketch of, 258.
- Deboe, W. J., 307.
- De Tocqueville, quoted, 176.
- Democratic Party, 178, 251.
- Deshea, General Joseph, 209, 210; Governor, 222, 224.
- Dinwiddie, Robert, 21, 22.
- Douglas, James, 37.
- Drake, Dr. Daniel, 236.
- Dudley, Dr. Benjamin, 236.
- Dudley, Colonel William, 207.
- Duke, Colonel Basil, n. 284.
- Dunmore, Lord, Governor of Virginia, 37; Dunmore's War, 38; proclamation, 46.
- Duquesne (dü kăn), Captain, 69.
- Durrett, Colonel Ruben T., 17; arrested, 272.
- Early explorers, 16.
- Early laws, 54.
- Earthquake, 1811, 231.
- Education, cost of, compared, 323.
- Education and Art, 235.
- Educational Progress, 319.
- Edwards, John, 149.
- Elections, called to fill vacancies, 268; in 1864, 292; state and national, 312.
- Emancipation Proclamation, 289.
- Ernst, Richard P., 334.
- Estill, Captain James, 89; defeat of and death, 90.
- Estill's Station, attack on, 89.
- Fall of the Confederacy, 293.
- Fallen Timbers, battle of, 153.
- Families, great Kentucky, 339.
- Farmers, some leading, 317.
- Farm Organizations, 318.
- Farm Products, value of, 318.
- Federalist Party, 178, 256.
- Field, Colonel John, 39.
- Filibusters warned, 164.
- Filson, John, 132.
- Financial Struggles, 215.
- Finley, John, 21.
- First house built in Kentucky, 19.
- First Legislative Assembly, 47.
- First Seal of Kentucky, 144, 149.
- First permanent settlement of Kentucky, 41; first wedding, 67; first schools, 85; first steamboat, 133; first constitution, 145; first governor, 146; first capital, 146; first Legislature, 148; first permanent State House, 151; first railroad, 227.
- Fiske, John, quoted, 103.
- Fitch, John, 133.
- Flemming, Colonel William, 39.
- Floyd, John, 65, 86; death of, 130.
- Forests and timber, 333.
- Forrest, N. B., n. 282.
- Fort Donelson, fall of, 278.
- Fort George, fall of, 207.
- Fort Henry, fall of, 278.
- Fort Jefferson, 87.
- Fort Sumter, fall of, 262.
- France, sympathy for, 162; intrigue fails, 165; troubles with, 200.
- Frankfort, selected as capital, 150; heroes buried, 247.
- Freedmen's Bureau, 297.
- Freemen, negro, cast their first vote, 299.
- French and English claims, 22.
- Frenchtown, first and second battles of, 203, 204.
- Free Silver Campaign, 306.
- Garrard, Governor James, 181, 186.
- Garrard, Colonel T. T., 274.
- Genet, Edmund Charles, 162, 163; backers, 164.
- Geological surveys, 302.
- George III, Proclamation of, 23.
- Gibault, Pierre, 78.
- Girty, Simon, 88, 92, 93, 95.
- Gist, Christopher, 20, 21.

- Goebel Election Law, 308; repeal of, 311.
 Goebel, William, 308; assassination of, 309.
 Government, U. S., hesitancy of, 138.
 Grant, General U. S., in Mexican War, 245; invades Kentucky, 269, 278; at Shiloh, 279; captures Lee's army, 293, 294.
 Greensburg settled, 159.
 Greenup, Governor Christopher, 189.
 Guerrillas (gěr rīl'las), the, 282, 290.
 Guthrie, Judge James, 293.
- Hamilton, Alexander, 182, 192.
 Hamilton, Colonel Henry, 55, 68; captured, 79.
 Hardin, Colonel John, 139, 152.
 Hardin, P. W., 307.
 Hard Times, 228.
 Hard Winter, 83.
 Harlan, Major, 96, 98.
 Harlan, Major, 96, 98.
 Harlan, General John M., 288, 297, 300.
 Harmar's defeat, 138.
 Harmon's Station, 157.
 Harrison, General William H., 198; commissioned, 202; in War of 1812, 203-209.
 Harrodsburg settled, 41.
 Harrod, James, 37, 41, 76.
 Hart, Joel T., 236.
 Helm, John L., inaugurated Governor, 251; re-elected, 297.
 Helm, Leonard, 76, 80.
 Henderson, Colonel Richard, 43-53.
 Henry, Patrick, 50, 87.
 Hines, Thomas H., n. 284.
 Hobson, Edward H., 276.
 Holly, Dr. Horace, 235.
 Holmes House, 150.
 Home Guards, 272.
 Hood, John B., 276.
 Hopkinsville settled, 159.
 Huguenots (hū'gě nōts), 103.
 Hull, General Isaac, 202.
 Hunter, W. Godfrey, 307.
- Indian attacks, 41, 55, 56, 84, 93.
 Indian chiefs, Grand Council of, 92.
 Indians punished, 98; expeditions against, 88, 98, 127; subdued, 145; refuse to make treaty, 151.
 Indian Tribes, 10; relics, 11; religion and home life, 12; character and dress, 13; government, 14.
 Innes, Harry, 109, 111, 126, 140.
 Invasions of Kentucky, first, 273-274; second, 286-288.
 Inventions and inventors, 133, 134; use and need of, 234.
 Ivy Mountain, battle of, 274.
- Jackson, Andrew, 195; at New Orleans, 212; defeated for presidency, 226; elected President, 227; vetoes charter of U. S. Bank, 228.
 Jackson, General Thomas J., in Mexican War, 245.
 Jacob, Richard T., 289.
 James, Ollie M., 313.
 Jay, John, 108, 115; treaty, 178; burned in effigy, 179.
 Jefferson, Thomas, 50, 74, 87, 182, 185; purchases Louisiana, 188.
 Johnson, George W., 277.
 Johnson, James, 209.
 Johnson, Sir William, 23.
 Johnson, Richard M., 208-210.
 Johnston, General Albert Sidney, 276; evacuates Bowling Green, 278; killed, 279.
 Jones, Gabriel, 51.
 Jouett, Matthew H., 236.
- Kahokia captured, 78.
 Kanawha (ka na'wə), battle of, 39.
 Kaskaskia, capture of, 77.
 Kentuckians, manners and customs of, 168; as leaders, 337.
 Kentucky, before the white man came, 1; shape, 1; description of, 1-4; attempted settlement of, 35; immigration, 55; county divided, 86; part in the Revolution,

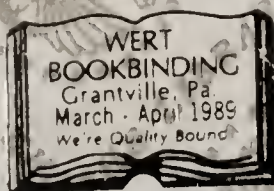
- 81; separation from Virginia, 106; Conventions, 107-120; Enabling acts, 111, 114, 119, 120; enters the Union, 114; in the Revolution, 122; progress, 169; Resolutions, 183; in War of 1812, 199; The Purchase, 230; loyalty to the Union, 253-255; attitude to secession, 257, 260; neutrality of, 263, 270.
- Kentucky Authors, 341.
- Kentucky and the Federal Government, 267.
- Kentucky Gazette, 127, 147.
- Kentucky River Company, 331.
- Kentucky soldiers, 276.
- Kelley, William, inventor, 235.
- Kenton, Simon, 52, 56; sketch of, 57; joins Clark, 75; death of, 233.
- Knott, Governor J. Proctor, 304.
- Know-Nothing Party, 251.
- Ku Klux Klan, 298.
- Labor and Capital, contest of, 307.
- Land Companies, 18.
- Landrum, Colonel J. J., 284.
- Langley, John W., 315.
- LaSalle, Robert de, 16.
- Lee, General Robert E., in Mexican War, 245; commander of Confederate armies, 293, 294; surrenders, 293.
- Legislature, first, 47, 148; resolutions of, 183, 187; special session called, 264; loyalty of, 269; repeal of the acts against treason, 296.
- Leslie, Preston H., elected Governor, 300.
- Letcher, Robert P., Governor, 237.
- Lewis, General Andrew, 38, 39.
- Lewis, Colonel William, at the battle of Frenchtown, 204, 205.
- Lexington settled, 82.
- Lincoln, Abraham, sketch of, 158; attitude to slavery, 261; inauguration of, 261; calls for troops, 263; refuses to acknowledge neutrality of Kentucky, 267; plan to free the slaves, 285; issues Emancipation Proclamation, 289; re-elected, 293; assassination, 295; n. 296.
- Lincoln Guns, 273.
- Linsay, William J., 307, 310.
- Lodge, Henry Cabot, quoted, 166.
- Logan, Colonel Benjamin, 55, 65, 86, 89, 96; victory, 128; member of War Board, 140.
- Logan's Station settled, 41; attack on, 55, 56.
- Long Hunters, The, 28.
- "Lost Cause," 295.
- Louisville Courier, 272, 341.
- Louisville settled, 74; Louisville Legion, 242.
- Louisiana, map of, 188; ceded by Spain to France, 187; purchase of, 188.
- Loyal Land Company, 19.
- Lynn, Captain William, 75.
- Lyon, Matthew, 184, n. 184.
- Madison, George, Governor, 215.
- Madison, James, President, 199, 201, 203.
- Magoffin, Beriah, elected Governor, 252; refuses call for troops, 263; calls a special session of the Legislature, 264; issues a warning, 266; vetoes resolutions, 269, 270; calls out troops, 274; resigns, 285.
- Manufacture, early, 170.
- Manufacturing industries, 332.
- Marshall, John, 114.
- Marshall, Humphrey, 112, 180.
- Marshall, Thomas, 238.
- Marshall, Colonel Humphrey, 220; in Mexican War, 242, 244; in Civil War, 274.
- Martial law declared, 280; abuse of, 296.
- McAfee brothers, 37, 45.
- McAfee's Station, 41, 45.
- McBride, James, 20, 65.
- McBride, Major, 96, 98.
- McClellan, General George B., in Mexican War, 245; commander Union troops, 267; candidate for President, 292.

- McCreary, James B., elected Governor, 304; senator, 307; re-elected Governor, 313.
- McDermott, Edward J., 313.
- McDowell, Samuel, 111, 130.
- McDowell, Dr. Ephraim, 236.
- McFadden's Station, 159.
- McGary, Hugh, 65, 96.
- McKee, William R., 242, at battle of Buena Vista, 244, 245.
- Menefee, Richard, 238.
- Metcalf, Thomas, elected Governor, 227; appointed U. S. senator, 248.
- Mills, Judge Benjamin, 221.
- Mill Springs, battle of, 277.
- Mining Industries, 324.
- Mississippi River controlled by Spain, 117, 123; treaty concerning, 179.
- Money, scarcity of, 216; kinds of, 217.
- Monterey, capture of, 242.
- Montgomery, Joseph, 75.
- Morehead, Governor Charles S., 251; arrested, 272.
- Morgan, General John H., in Mexican War, 245; in Civil War, 272; cavalry raids, 283, 286, 288.
- Morrow, Edwin P., 315; elected Governor, 334.
- Motto, of Kentucky, 150, 351.
- Mound Builders, 5, 156.
- Muter, George, 111, 149.
- Needham, James, 17.
- Negro soldiers, recruiting, 291.
- Nelson, General William, 273, 274.
- Neutrality abandoned, 270.
- New Court Party, 221-226.
- New England, attitude to War of 1812, 201.
- New Orleans, battle of, 211-213.
- Nicholas, George, 148.
- Night Riders, the 311.
- Normal Schools, 322.
- Old Court Party, 221-226.
- Oldham, William, 142.
- Old Kentucky Home, 171, 172.
- O'Hara, Theodore, in Mexican War, 247; sketch, n. 248; at Shiloh, 279; quoted, 232, 247.
- Ohio Land Company, 19, 20.
- Omnibus Bill, 249.
- O'Rear, Judge E. C., 313.
- Ormsby, Colonel, in Mexican War, 242.
- Owen, David D., geologist, 302.
- Owens, Colonel Abraham, 198.
- Owensboro, settled, 159.
- Owsley, Judge William, 221; elected Governor, 237; calls for volunteers, 241.
- Packenham, Sir Edward, 211, 212.
- Paris, settled, 131.
- Patterson, Dr. James K., 322.
- Patterson, Colonel Robert, 82, 132.
- Payne, General John, 202.
- Paynter, Thomas H., 307, 313.
- Perils and Romance, 66.
- Perry, Oliver H., 208.
- Petroleum, discovery and production of, 326.
- Pinckney, Thomas, 180, 187.
- Pioneer preachers, 158; pioneer women, 173.
- Pioneer schools, 85; pioneer homes, 176.
- Pioneers, character of, 30; his Indian foe, 32; origin, 100, 103; settle Kentucky, 41; at play, 175.
- Point Pleasant, battle of, 38.
- Politics, National, 225; state, 334.
- Political crisis, 161; political beginnings, 177; political affairs, 302.
- Political parties, rise of, 178; contest of, 182-183; changes in, 226; conservative and radical elements, 297.
- Polk, James K., President, 241.
- Population in 1920, compared, 336.
- Powder obtained, 51.
- Powell, Governor Lazarus W., 251.
- Power, Thomas, 180.
- Powers, Caleb, 315.
- Prehistoric Animals, 9.
- Prentice, George D., 252.

- Preston, General William, in Mexican War, 242; in Civil War, 276.
- Preston, Colonel William, surveyor, 37.
- Primary Election Law, 314.
- Prison reforms, 304.
- Proctor, General, at Frenchtown, 204, 205; at the Raisin, 205; at Fort Meigs, 206; at the Thames, 207, 209, 211.
- Proprietary Government, 43.
- Purchase, The, 231.
- Railroad, first built in Kentucky, 227.
- Raisin (rā'zn), massacre of, 205.
- Recruiting soldiers, 273.
- Relief Party, 220-222.
- Relics, Indian, 11.
- Religion, of pioneers, 158, 174; revival of, 190.
- Republican Party, 178.
- Review of a hundred and forty-eight years, 343.
- Revolutionary War, 81, 103; soldiers of, 105.
- River Highways, development of, 331.
- Roads to Kentucky, 59-63.
- Roads, improvement of, 328-331; legislation, 329-330.
- Road Commissioners, 330.
- Robertson, Judge George, 292.
- Robinson, Governor James F., 285.
- Robinson, Camp Dick, 273.
- Roosevelt, Theodore, quoted, 126, 140, 165, 173, 180, 195.
- Rousseau, Lovell H., 276.
- Rowan, John, 223, 224.
- Ruddle's Station settled, 83; capture of, 84.
- Rumsey, James, inventor, 134.
- Russellville, settled, 159; meeting of Confederate convention in, 276.
- Salt makers captured, 67.
- Santa Anna, General, 240, 243.
- Schools, 85, 235, 319, 323.
- School legislation, 320-322.
- Scotch-Irish, 102, 103.
- Scott, General Charles, 141, 152; elected Governor, 197-202.
- Scott, General Winfield, 244, 245.
- Sebastian, Benjamin, 126, 149.
- Secession, 261.
- Second Invasion of Kentucky, 280.
- Semple, Ellen, 240; quoted, 168.
- Separatists', movement of, 180.
- Shaler, Nathan S., geologist, 302; quoted, 145.
- Sherman, General William T., in Mexican War, 245.
- Shelby, Isaac, 39; at King's Mountain, 123; member of War Board, 140; Governor, 146; raises troops, 152; in Genet enterprise, 165; re-elected Governor, 202; in the War of 1812, 207, 208; death of, 233.
- Shiloh, battle of, 279.
- Slaughter, Gabriel, Governor, 215.
- Slavery, 181, 238; Kentucky's attitude to, 240; in the South, 255; doomed, 289.
- Slaves, number of, 255; freed in District of Columbia, 279; plan to free them, 285; freed and given political rights, 296; behavior, 299.
- Smith, General Kirby, 287.
- Smith, General Green Clay, 276, 284.
- Smith, Z. F., quoted, 281.
- Smithers (Smothers), William, 159.
- Soldier settlers, 105.
- Sovereignty Convention, 276.
- Spanish intrigues, 117, 118, 122, 125, 182.
- Speed, James, 297.
- Spirit of Independence, 49.
- Squatters and Surveyors, 36.
- Stanley, A. O., elected Governor, 315.
- State Guards, 271.
- State House, new, 305.
- States' Rights, 256.
- St. Clair's Expedition and defeat, 141; Governor northwest, 164.
- Stevenson, John W., elected Governor, 297.

- Stewart, John, 26.
 Stoner, Michael, 38, 57.
 Sycamore Shoals, Treaty of, 43.
- Taylor, William S., 308, 310.
 Taylor, General Zachary, in the Mexican War, 241-245; elected President, 248.
 Tecumseh, Indian chief, 198, 207; in the battle of the Thames, 209; killed, 210.
 Temperance Campaign, 313.
 Texas, settlement of, 239; Revolution, 239; enters the Union, 241.
 Thomas, General George H., 278.
 Tilghman (tĭl'man), General Lloyd, 272.
 Tippecanoe, battle of, 198.
 Tobacco troubles, 311, 312.
 Todd, John, 37, 57, 65, 86, 96.
 Todd, Charles, 210.
 Todd, Levi, 37, 96.
 Todd, Thomas, 111.
 Toll Gate Raiders, 307.
 Tompkinsville raided, 284.
 Trade, development of, 186; enemies of, 187.
 Transylvania Company, 43.
 Transylvania Settlement, 45; assembly, 47; conflict of authority, 49; results, 52; land grant to, 53.
 Treaties, of 1763, 23; with Indians, 40; Sycamore Shoals, 43; with England, 179; with Spain, 180; of Ghent, 211; Guadalupe Hidalgo, 246.
 Trimble, John, 223.
 "True American," Abolition paper, 239.
 Truman, Major, 152.
 Trying times, 91.
 Turner, historian, quoted, 104, 105.
 Tyler, John, President, 241.
- Underwood, Joseph R., 252.
 Union Generals, 276.
 Union Party, 252; leaders, 297.
 Union or disunion, 259.
 United States Banks, 224.
- Vincennes captured, 78; fall and recapture, 79.
 Virginia, Charter of 1609, 21; divides Kentucky County, 86; protects Kentucky settlers, 2; Kentucky part of Virginia, 50; grant to Transylvania Company 53; acts of separation of Kentucky, 111-120.
- Wabash Indians, 141.
 Wadsworth, William H., 297.
 Walker, Dr. Thomas, 19, 21, 156.
 Wallace, Caleb, 149.
 War Board, 140.
 Wars, Dunmore's, 38; Revolution 122; War of 1812, 199-211; Mexican War, 237-245; Civil War, 271-295.
 War and Waste, 327.
 "Warrior's Path," 17.
 Washington, George, 22, 143, 146; first surveyor, 156; attitude to the West, 166; re-elected, 178.
 Watterson, Henry, journalist, 341.
 Wayne, General Anthony, 152; defeats Indians, 153.
 West, Edward, inventor, 134.
 Westward expansion, 189.
 Western fever, 42.
 Whigs and Whig governors, 237, 248; fall of Whig Party, 251.
 Whitley, William, n. 210.
 Wilderness Road, 44; map of, 60; description of, 61; influence of, 63, 124.
 Wilkinson, James, 110, 111, 115, 125; failure of, 126.
 Williams, Captain John, 242, 245, 304.
 Willson, Augustus E., elected Governor, 312.
 Winchester, General James, 203-205.
 Wood, Colonel Abraham, 17.
 Woolford, Colonel Frank, 284, 292.
 World War, 327; cost of, 328.
 Wyandots, attack, 90.
- Zollicoffer, General Felix, 274; killed, 278.





WERT
BOOKBINDING
Grantville, Pa.
March - April 1989
We're Quality Bound

